



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

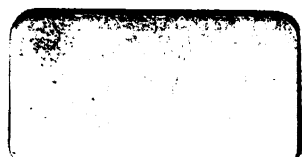
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

EducT
1513
00.230

FRENCH SYNTAX
AND
COMPOSITION

• • • BOUVET • • •

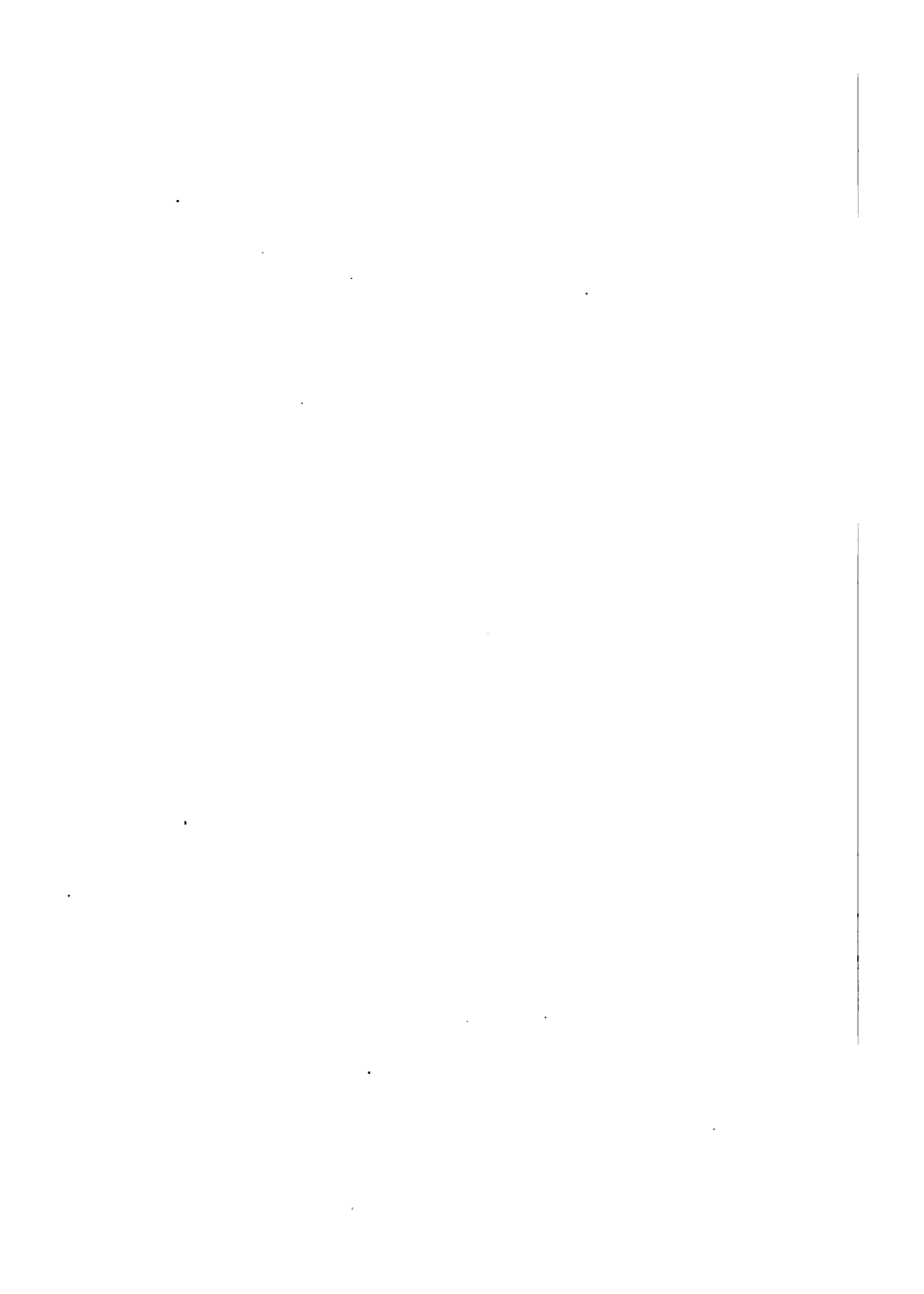
Exerc T 1519.09.230





3 2044 102 858 446





Heath's Modern Language Series

EXERCISES
IN
FRENCH SYNTAX AND
COMPOSITION

WITH NOTES AND VOCABULARY

BY

JEANNE M. BOUVET

TEACHER OF FRENCH IN THE WENDELL PHILLIPS HIGH SCHOOL, CHICAGO

BOSTON, U.S.A.

D. C. HEATH & CO., PUBLISHERS

1909

EducT 1519.09.230

✓



COPYRIGHT, 1901,
By D. C. HEATH & Co.

PREFACE.

THE chief obstacle to obtaining the best results from a course in French composition, is usually the student's lack of practice in applying the elementary rules and principles of grammar; yet, these must be mastered if he desires to speak or write the language correctly, or even to read it intelligently. The conviction that this mastery can be obtained only by thorough and systematic work from the foundations, has led to the preparation of a text-book, which I should not venture to submit to the attention of teachers of French, if its practicability had not been thoroughly tested in the class-room.

It is hoped that the novel plan of combining, in the same volume, exercises in grammar and syntax with selections for prose composition, will recommend itself to teachers for reasons of economy and of convenience for reference, but especially because such an arrangement insures progressive work in grammatical construction, side by side with practice in composition, to the end of the course. In schools and colleges where a short elementary grammar only is used, this book should be found especially valuable as supplementing or completing the study thus begun, and affording an opportunity to utilize the rules and new facts necessarily acquired in too rapid succession from such works. On the other hand, where more time is devoted to grammar and larger text-books are used, it seems equally necessary to review and emphasize the great universals of the language.

This has been my sole aim in the selection of topics treated in Part I., which lays no claim to grammatical completeness,

but includes a number of subjects offering special difficulties to American students, and on which they need more practice than grammars usually give. The material in these exercises has been graded with the utmost care, so that, with copious foot-notes and a complete vocabulary, students might be able to translate the first of them early in their course. My endeavor has been to make the majority of the sentences mean something, to make them express a thought or an idea in a language that should be simple, natural, and sufficiently idiomatic. Rules and inflections to which pupils can be easily referred in any grammar previously studied, have been omitted, while certain subjects are supplied with extra exercises.

Part II. consists of interesting selections for connected translation, taken from French sources and relating to French topics, chiefly historical, biographical, and literary. The style of these selections, however, is neither stiff nor formal, as is too apt to be the case with composition work on these subjects. My aim has not been to impose upon the pupil a polish and an elegance of expression which would be unnatural to him if he were using his own tongue, but to furnish him with ordinary, though correct and idiomatic, English, so constructed that, with the aids given, it might readily be turned into good French. The size and character of the vocabulary will show that quite a variety of styles has been exemplified.

The book is planned in such a way that continuous work in syntax can be made to alternate with the translation of the connected prose, after the first lessons in grammar have been reviewed. In a college course of three years, the grammatical review of the first year might extend through the study of the pronouns; that of the second, through the conditional constructions; that of the third, devoted to the study of the subjunctive and past participle. This work is so graded in difficulty that each division may be supplemented by one of the sections of Part II., marked respectively *Easy Prose Composition*, *More*

Advanced Prose Composition, and *Idiomatic Prose Composition*, thus varying the lessons, but effecting a closer connection between practice in composition and the higher study of grammar, — subjects too often separated. Of course, other schemes of arrangement may be devised according to the age of pupils and the length of the course in different schools.

I would strongly recommend that instructors require frequent oral and written reviews of both exercises and selections after correction. I need not say that the systematic study of regular and irregular verbs is an indispensable part of the plan of work here suggested.

Great pains have been taken to make the notes easily comprehensible to the student and adapted to his needs; in the amount of help given, I have considered the necessities of each exercise rather than its position in the book. The vocabulary also was made slowly and with much care, so as to secure completeness and accuracy in that part of the book where these are most desirable. As, however, errors and omissions are only too possible, any corrections or suggestions will be gratefully received.

JEANNE M. BOUVET.

CHICAGO, January, 1901.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

PART I.

EXERCISES IN GRAMMAR AND SYNTAX.

	PAGE
1. The Partitive Article (<i>Some or Any</i>)	3
2. Syntax of the Definite Article	5
3. Omission of the Article	6
4. Plural of Nouns	7
5. Feminine and Plural of Adjectives	9
6. Conjunctive Personal Pronouns	10
<i>a.</i> Two Pronoun Objects before the Verb in Declarative, Interrogative, and Negative Sentences	11
<i>b.</i> Personal Pronoun Objects of Verbs in the Imperative Mood	12
<i>c.</i> Personal Pronoun Objects of Reflexive Verbs in the Impera- tive Mood	13
<i>d.</i> <i>En, Y, Le</i>	14
<i>e.</i> Direct and Indirect Objects combined with <i>En</i> and <i>Y</i> after Verbs in the Imperative Mood	17
7. Disjunctive Personal Pronouns	18
8. Possessive Pronouns	20
9. Demonstrative Pronouns	21
10. When to use "ce," when "il" with <i>Être</i>	25
11. Interrogative Pronouns	28
12. Relative Pronouns	31
13. Indefinite Adjectives and Pronouns	34
14. <i>Tout, Même, Quelque, Quel . . . que</i>	38
15. Verbs conjugated with <i>Être</i>	40
16. Reflexive Verbs	41
17. Active Voice with <i>On</i> for Subject	43

	PAGE
18. Four Important Modal Verbs	44
<i>a. Devoir</i>	44
<i>b. Falloir</i>	48
<i>c. Pouvoir</i>	52
<i>d. Vouloir</i>	55
19. Uses of the (a) Past Indefinite, (b) Past Definite, and (c) Imperfect	59
20. Conditional Constructions	62
21. The Subjunctive. Principal Cases of its Use	65
Case I. The Subjunctive depending upon Verbs and Conjunctions	66
Case II. The Subjunctive depending upon Impersonal Constructions	70
Case III. The Subjunctive in Relative Clauses	72
Case IV. The Subjunctive in Negative or Interrogative Sentences	75
22. Minor Cases of the Subjunctive	77
23. Sequence of the Tenses of the Subjunctive with those of the Indicative	78
24. Principal Cases of the Agreement of the Past Participle	79
Case I. The Past Participle used without the Auxiliary	79
Case II. The Past Participle used with <i>Être</i>	79
Case III. The Past Participle used with <i>Avoir</i>	80
Case IV. The Past Participle of Reflexive Verbs	80

PART II.

EASY PROSE COMPOSITION.

1. The Childhood of Duguesclin	87
2. Duguesclin and the "Free Companies"	88
3. Duguesclin a Prisoner in Spain	89
4. Duguesclin a Constable of France	90
5. Exploits of Chevalier Bayard	91
6. Anecdotes about Louis XI.	93
7. Henry IV., King of Navarre	94
8. The Youth of Sully	96
9. The Youth of Richelieu	98

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

ix

	PAGE
10. Colbert, Minister of Louis XIV.	99
11. Death of Louis XVI.	100
12. Napoleon Bonaparte	101
13. Marriage of Napoleon with Marie-Louise	102

MORE ADVANCED PROSE COMPOSITION.

1. Les Précieuses Ridicules, by Molière	104
2. An Adventure of Rabelais	105
3. The Story of Jacques Amyot	107
4. Jean-Baptiste Lulli	112
5. La Marc-au-Diable, by George Sand	115
6. The Silent Academy	120
7. Chateaubriand	121

IDIOMATIC PROSE COMPOSITION.

1. Literary Notes on Some Authors of the Seventeenth Century:	
<i>a.</i> Corneille	124
<i>b.</i> Molière	128
<i>c.</i> Boileau	131
<i>d.</i> La Fontaine	133
<i>e.</i> Racine	137
<i>f.</i> Madame de Sévigné	139
2. Genius of Balzac compared with that of George Sand	143

VOCABULARY	149
----------------------	-----

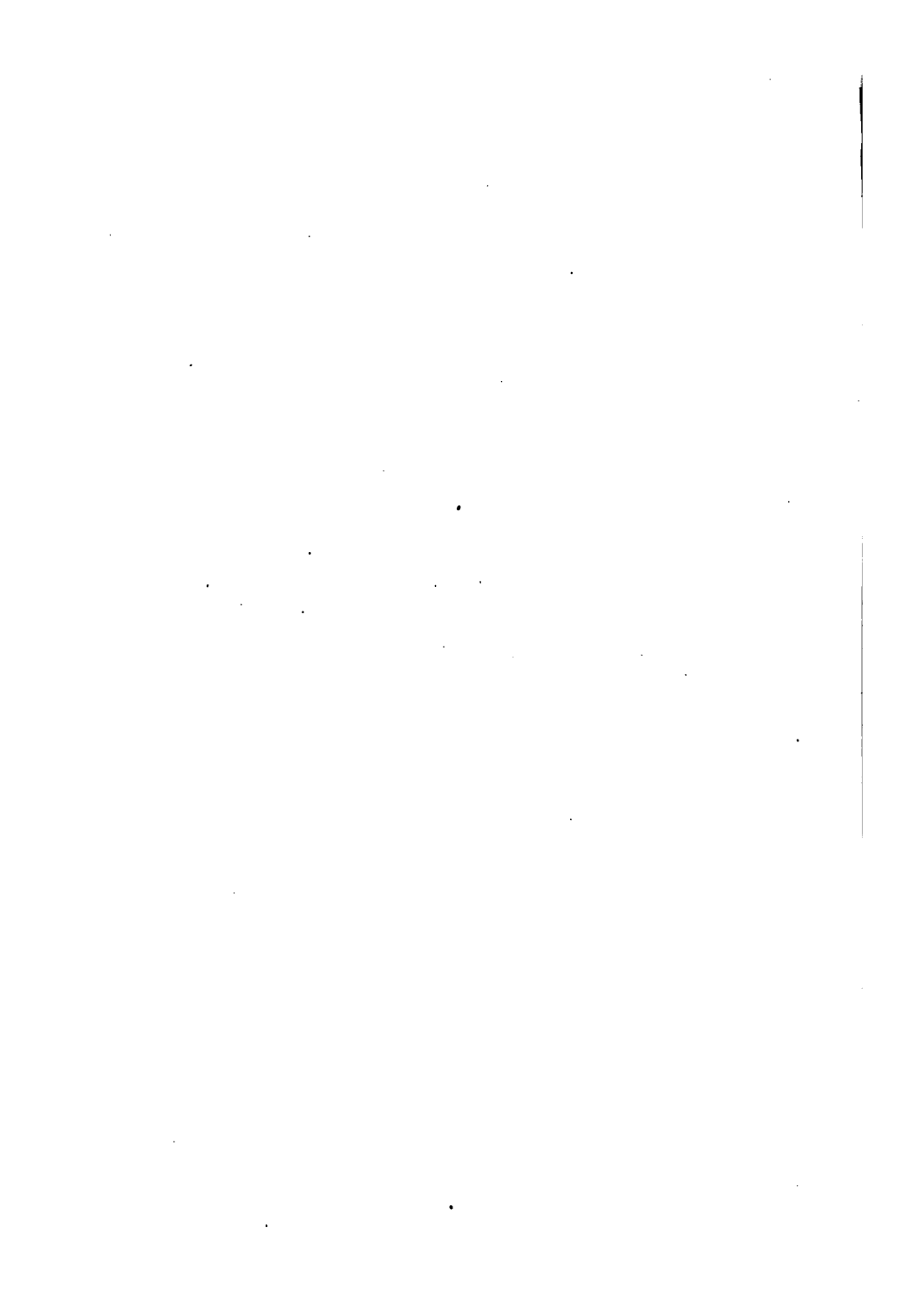
1. The first part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the general principles of the theory of the structure of the human brain. It is shown that the brain is a complex system of interconnected parts, each of which has its own function. The author emphasizes the importance of the study of the structure of the brain for the understanding of the human mind.

2. The second part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the methods of the study of the structure of the human brain. It is shown that there are several methods of study, each of which has its own advantages and disadvantages. The author emphasizes the importance of the use of all methods in the study of the structure of the human brain.

3. The third part of the paper is devoted to a discussion of the results of the study of the structure of the human brain. It is shown that the brain is a complex system of interconnected parts, each of which has its own function. The author emphasizes the importance of the study of the structure of the brain for the understanding of the human mind.

PART I.

EXERCISES IN GRAMMAR AND SYNTAX.



EXERCISES IN GRAMMAR AND SYNTAX.



1. THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE (*SOME* OR *ANY*).

Some or *any* may often be omitted in English. Their French equivalents *du, de la, de l', des*, are nearly always expressed. These articles are sometimes changed to *de* or *d'*, without regard to the gender or number of the noun limited. This change is to be noted especially in the following cases :—

a. When an adjective precedes the noun.* If it follows the noun, *du, de la, de l', or des* is used.

b. After adverbs of quantity, such as *beaucoup* = *much* or *many*; *peu* = *little* or *few*; *plus* = *more*; *moins* = *less* or *fewer*; *assez* = *enough*; *trop* = *too much, too many*; *tant* = *so much, so many*; *autant* = *as much, as many*, etc.

c. After verbs in the negative. Affirmative English verbs, followed by the indefinite adjective *no* and *a noun*, are translated into French by the negative form of the verb followed by *de* or *d'*. Ex.: *we have no friends here* = *nous n'avons pas d'amis ici*.

d. When a noun is limited by an adjective phrase composed of *de* and another noun; *un morceau de pain* = *a piece of bread*; *un bracelet d'or* = *a gold bracelet*; *un lit de fer* = *an iron bed*. Observe that, in many cases, the descriptive phrase may be

* In a decree, dated July 31, 1900, the Minister of Public Instruction in France authorizes the use of *du, de la, de l', des*, instead of *de* or *d'*, before nouns preceded by adjectives.

converted into a single English noun, which then performs the office of an adjective.

Note.—In the following exercise, as indeed in every case, the student should bear in mind that *some* or *any* must not only be supplied but repeated in the French translation, wherever these words would not be out of place in English.

Exercise 1.

1. Racine had¹ genius. 2. Numerous² armies invaded³ Greece.⁴ 3. Madame de Sévigné wrote⁵ charming⁶ letters. 4. Why do you live alone here? Have you no relatives? no⁷ friends? no children? 5. Many people⁸ sacrifice⁹ the present to the future. 6. Racine and Corneille wrote¹⁰ admirable⁶ tragedies. 7. So much goodness reveals¹¹ a noble¹² soul. 8. I prefer¹³ your cloth dress to¹⁴ your silk one.¹⁵ 9. I will not make you¹⁶ any apologies. 10. Alexander conquered³ immense² countries. 11. Racine has less sublimity; Corneille possesses more depth. 12. I know¹⁷ few people¹⁸ capable of sacrificing¹⁹ their interests. 13. Enough wretchedness torments the people.²⁰ 14. The queen wore¹ a magnificent necklace of diamonds. 15. Bossuet's²¹ eloquence has much loftiness; that²² of Fénelon has much grace,²³ but it has not as much force.²⁴ 16. Venice has incomparable² marvels; her²⁵ ancient splendor has left ineffaceable³ memories. 17. Too much rest lessens the vigor of the body. 18. We ate⁵ a piece of cake and²⁶ drank⁵ a glass of wine. 19. There is²⁷ never any oil in your lamp. 20. Little² causes have often²⁸ produced great² effects.

¹ use imperfect. ² all adjectives in this exercise should precede the noun unless otherwise indicated; turn 'some numerous armies.' ³ past definite. ⁴ requires definite article. ⁵ past indefinite. ⁶ place after the noun. ⁷ do not repeat *pas*. ⁸ *monde*, m. ⁹ singular. ¹⁰ past indefinite of *composer*. ¹¹ *annoncer*. ¹² *belle*. ¹³ *aimer mieux*. ¹⁴ *que*. ¹⁵ repeat the noun. ¹⁶ place before the verb. ¹⁷ *connaître*. ¹⁸ *gens*, m. pl. ¹⁹ infinitive present. ²⁰ *peuple*, m. ²¹ 'the eloquence

of.¹ ²² *celle*. ²³ *douceur*, f. ²⁴ *énergie*, f. ²⁵ *son*. ²⁶ repeat the subject. ²⁷ put *n'* before the verb and replace *pas* by *jamais*. ²⁸ place after participle.

2. SYNTAX OF THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

The definite article is used in French : —

1. Before abstract nouns.
2. Before common nouns used in a general sense.
3. Before nouns expressing measure, weight, number, where the indefinite article is used in English.
4. Before geographical names, except towns, and before titles.
5. Before names of sciences and metals.
6. Before parts of the body, instead of the *possessive adjective*, where the meaning is not equivocal.

Exercise 2.

1. Opinion is queen of the world. 2. Happiness is less dependent upon¹ circumstances than upon character. 3. Death, like birth, is a mystery of nature. 4. Riches rarely² profit those who acquire them. 5. To encourage virtue is to punish vice. 6. The world was³ made for man, and man for heaven.⁴ 7. Work is the inexhaustible² source of pure² and real² pleasures. 8. Noble⁵ deeds excite admiration. 9. Vices form a chain of which⁶ selfishness is the first link. 10. There are four maladies difficult to cure : love of self, avarice, vain-glory, and ambition. 11. Man is ever the same ; at ten,⁷ he is enticed by sweets ; at thirty, by pleasures ; at forty, by ambition ; at fifty, by avarice. 12. This beautiful lace costs⁸ fifty francs a metre. 13. Astronomy is the science of the heavenly² bodies. 14. The Romans conquered⁹ Asia as well as Africa. 15. Happiness depends more upon¹⁰ the affections than upon¹¹ events. 16. Great thoughts come from the heart. 17. The highest mountains of the globe are in Thibet. 18. Fontenelle looked¹² upon life as a dream whose¹³ awakening is death.

19. None of the productions of man is¹⁴ eternal. 20. As soon as I am awake,¹⁵ I wash¹⁶ my hands, face, and neck with¹⁷ soap and water.

¹ *de*. ² place after the word modified. ³ *est*. ⁴ use plural. ⁵ *belles*.
⁶ 'of which the first link is selfishness.' ⁷ add *ans* after this numeral, but after no other in the sentence. ⁸ *se vend*. ⁹ past indefinite. ¹⁰ *tient plus aux*.
¹¹ *qu'aux*. ¹² imperfect. ¹³ insert *le*. ¹⁴ *n'est*. ¹⁵ reduce this clause to *aussitôt éveillé*. ¹⁶ reflexive. ¹⁷ insert 'some' before both nouns.

3. OMISSION OF THE ARTICLE.

The article is omitted : —

1. When a noun is taken in apposition with another.
2. In proverbial expressions.
3. In enumerations, for the sake of conciseness.
4. Before words used in apostrophe.
5. Before nouns indicating a title, profession, nationality, religious denomination, when these are used adjectively.
6. Before the title of a book or chapter.
7. After the indefinite adjective *quel* = *what*, in exclamations.
8. After names of kings, followed by numerals indicating order in a dynasty.
9. After such prepositions as *en*, *avec*, *sans*, *par*, *sur*, etc., when they combine with the following noun to form an adverbial or adjective phrase.
10. After certain verbs, followed directly by nouns with which they frequently form idioms, as : —

Avoir coutume de, *to be used to*.

Avoir envie de, *to have a mind to*.

Avoir pitié de, *to pity*.

Avoir raison de, *to be right*.

Ajouter foi à, *to believe in*.

Courir risque de, *to run the risk of*.

Faire bonne chère, *to live well*.

Faire peur à, *to frighten*.

Faire attention à, *to mind*.

Faire cas de, *to value, to think well of*.

Faire plaisir à, *to please, to give pleasure*.

Faire mine de, *to pretend*.

Faire fond sur, *to count upon*.

Exercise 3.

1. Monsieur Thiers was¹ born at² Marseilles, a very ancient³ city in the south⁴ of France. 2. Women, children, old men—all⁵ were massacred. 3. What a noise you are making, children! 4. My father is a lawyer. 5. Victor Hugo was buried in the⁶ Pantheon, an honor which he well⁸ deserved.⁷ 6. O passions! you who have caused so many⁸ evils, I dread you more than death. 7. A gentle⁹ rain quiets a great wind (Proverb). 8. A rolling¹⁰ stone gathers no⁸ moss (Proverb). 9. Prayers, tears—nothing has any effect¹¹ on a hard⁸ heart. 10. His father is an Englishman, and his mother is an Italian. 11. The church of¹² Saint Mark, in² Venice, surpasses in splendor, in color, in richness of mosaic, anything that one¹³ can imagine. 12. He has always received me¹⁴ with kindness. 13. You run the risk¹⁵ of being¹⁶ ill treated. 14. Your friend always⁸ has a¹² good appetite. 15. Why are you thus without money, without friends? 16. Your conduct has given¹⁵ me pleasure. 17. I depend¹⁵ upon your friendship.

¹ *est*. ² 'at,' 'to,' or 'in' must be translated by *à* before names of cities. ³ place after the word modified. ⁴ *du Midi*. ⁵ *tout*; predicate must agree in the singular. ⁶ *a été inhumé au*. ⁷ imperfect. ⁸ *de* or the contracted article? ⁹ *petite*. ¹⁰ change participial adjective to relative clause, and place after the noun. ¹¹ *n'a d'empire*. ¹² omit this word. ¹³ *tout ce que l'on*. ¹⁴ before or after the verb? ¹⁵ see list of idiomatic verbs under rules. ¹⁶ the infinitive is used after all prepositions except *en*, which requires the present participle.

4. PLURAL OF NOUNS.

Review rules and exceptions for the formation of *Plural of Nouns*.

Exercise 4.

1. God has given¹ wool to the lambs, fur⁹ to the wild¹ beasts, and feathers to birds. 2. Owls are night⁸ birds that have round eyes.⁴ 3. Two pupils may be⁸ rivals in their⁶

studies, and friends during⁷ their recreations. 4. The museums of the Louvre contain¹ beautiful enamels. 5. The balls of the opera in Paris have a great reputation. 6. Bolts can not bar out⁸ thought. 7. There are¹ blues of different shades. 8. Men fear death which ends all their evils. 9. The hair⁹ is⁹ the ornament of the head. 10. The French are the rivals rather than the enemies of the English. 11. The knees are flexible like¹ springs. 12. Iron is the most useful of¹⁰ minerals; wheat, the most useful of vegetables; and the horse, the most useful of animals. 13. Nature purifies water⁹ by the fire⁹ of volcanoes. 14. There are plants which grow¹¹ between¹² pebbles. 15. The roots of trees resemble¹³ little tubes. 16. The rich⁹ drive¹⁴ in elegant landaus. 17. My house is surrounded with¹⁵ cabbages and lettuce.⁹ 18. The most beautiful jewels of a mother are her children. 19. Of all the ancient carnivals, that¹⁶ of Venice was¹⁷ the most brilliant. 20. One sees few¹⁸ well formed noses and necks.¹⁹

¹ insert 'some.' ² place after noun, and translate by *fauxes*. ³ 'some birds of night.' ⁴ 'the eyes round.' ⁵ *peuvent être*. ⁶ *les*. ⁷ *dans*. ⁸ 'bar out' = *arrêter*. ⁹ put in the plural. ¹⁰ 'of the.' ¹¹ *naissent*. ¹² insert *les*. ¹³ *ressemblent à de*. ¹⁴ *se promènent en*. ¹⁵ translate 'with' by *de* before both nouns. ¹⁶ use the demonstrative pronoun *celui*. ¹⁷ imperfect. ¹⁸ use *de* before both nouns. ¹⁹ 'noses and necks well made.'

Exercise 5.

Translate the following phrases and sentences, first in the *singular* and then in the *plural*:—

1. My sister is my friend and my companion. 2. The horse is the friend of the Arab. 3. This general is a hero. 4. The wall of my garden. 5. The inhabitant of this country. 6. The arm raised toward the sky. 7. The price of this coral. 8. The pupil of the eye. 9. The boat on the canal. 10. The discourse of this orator. 11. The child in his cradle. 12. The plaything of the child. 13. The blade of this knife. 14. The hole of the mouse.

5. FEMININE AND PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

Review rules and exceptions for the formation of the *feminine* and *plural* of *adjectives*. The pupil will understand that most of the nouns modified are of the feminine gender ; the position of the adjectives is the same in French as in English, unless otherwise indicated in the notes.

Exercise 6.

1. The forests of¹ America are as old as the world. 2. A bad action renders the conscience uneasy. 3. Joy is deeper when it is shared² with³ friends. 4. The language of the heart is the universal⁴ language. 5. A secret⁴ joy is rarely⁵ a perfect⁶ joy. 6. My dear mother, I shall be docile, attentive, studious, loving, and obedient, in order that⁷ you may always⁴ be⁸ satisfied with⁹ your little girl. 7. The forget-me-not is a sweet¹⁰ flower. 8. The negroes have thick lips.¹¹ 9. Commerce is a useful⁴ and lucrative⁴ profession. 10. His answer is brief, but it is expressive. 11. This law is very ancient. 12. A sweet⁴ face is a good recommendation. 13. The bearing of the Arabs is grave and proud. 14. A dissipated⁴ life leads to¹² total⁶ ruin. 15. The life of the mariner is a dangerous⁴ life. 16. The tongue is the best and the worst of¹³ things. 17. Pure¹⁴ religion is gentle, tolerant, and conciliatory. 18. The Greek⁴ language is beautiful, rich, and harmonious. 19. The old Gothic⁴ churches are admirable. 20. High mountains are covered² with⁹ eternal⁴ snows.

¹ no article before 'America.' ² participles conjugated with *être* must agree with the subject. ³ insert 'some.' ⁴ place after word modified. ⁵ *n'est presque jamais*. ⁶ *complet*; see note 4. ⁷ *afin que*. ⁸ subjunctive present. ⁹ *de*. ¹⁰ *gentil*, irr. ¹¹ 'have the lips thick.' ¹² insert *une*. ¹³ insert definite article. ¹⁴ *vrai*.

Exercise 7 (Same Subject).

1. Raw¹ silk is white or yellow. 2. Red¹ partridges are larger and better than gray¹ partridges. 3. Public¹ education

is superior to private¹ education. 4. Fortune is fickle; its favors are fugitive and deceitful. 5. I often¹ meet² new¹ words, but³ rarely a new¹ idea. 6. Women are coquettish when they are beautiful, and scolds⁴ when they are good.⁵ 7. The vowels are long or short. 8. His thought is always ambiguous. 9. Beautiful⁶ blue¹ eyes seem to reflect the color of the sky. 10. Often an old error has been proclaimed as a new¹ truth. 11. I do not like sulky¹ little girls. 12. This is⁷ a foolish adventure. 13. The most odious⁸ ingratitude is that of a⁹ child toward his parents. 14. This writing is neat and regular. 15. Man is endowed with¹⁰ a progressive¹ nature. 16. Everybody likes polite¹¹ manners, gentle looks, and affectionate words. 17. This young girl has¹¹ rosy cheeks and a pretty¹² mouth. 18. Good deeds make¹³ life happy. 19. Personal¹ liberty is the first condition of human¹ existence. 20. Switzerland is mountainous and picturesque.

¹ place after word modified. ² insert 'some.' ³ omit this word. ⁴ *grondeuses*. ⁵ *sages*. ⁶ must be preceded by *de*. ⁷ *voilà*. ⁸ 'the ingratitude the most odious.' ⁹ use definite article. ¹⁰ *de*. ¹¹ in this sentence, put *les* before all nouns, and all the adjectives after the nouns; for word order, see note 11 of Exercise 6. ¹² *mignon*, irr. ¹³ *rendre*.

8. CONJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Review the forms of personal pronouns as *subject, direct, indirect, or reflexive object*, and their position before the verb.

Remark. — When the verb is in a compound tense, remember to place the object pronoun *before* the auxiliary, not *between* the auxiliary and past participle.

Exercise 8.

1. The laws protect him. 2. Fortune¹ has betrayed you. 3. Victory will not² abandon us. 4. I should not have recommended³ her. 5. The beauty of the sky has always⁴ enchanted me. 6. Riches dazzle us. 7. The truth ought⁵ not to offend them. 8. Every one⁶ looks for happiness, and no one⁷ finds

it. 9. My counsels will guide you. 10. Time and reflection will enlighten you. 11. I have brought her⁸ a bouquet. 12. He bores me very⁹ much. 13. I shall speak to him in private. 14. This idea torments him. 15. Some one is listening to us. 16. How do you like¹⁰ this book? I think it charming. 17. Do you speak to him? to her? to them? 18. Treacherous¹¹ friends have betrayed him. 19. Thy passions blind thee. 20. His¹² ambition will ruin him. 21. The hope of succeeding¹³ gives them confidence. 22. I will go to see her to-morrow morning.

¹ remember that abstract nouns require definite article. ² place *ne* immediately after the subject, so as to allow the object pronoun to precede the verb. ³ use past conditional. ⁴ when adverbs of time modify verbs used in compound tenses, they are placed, as in English, *between* the auxiliary and past participle. ⁵ *devrait*; here, as usual, this verb governs the infinitive. ⁶ *chacun*. ⁷ *nul ne*; both precede the verb, and *pas* is omitted. ⁸ the sense is not 'her,' but 'to her'; hence, use the indirect form of the pronoun. ⁹ never translate 'very' before 'much.' ¹⁰ such verbs as 'like,' 'think,' used in the sense of 'to have an opinion of,' are translated by *trouver*. ¹¹ adjective follows noun. ¹² *son*, because *ambition* begins with a vowel. ¹³ infinitive.

a. Two Personal Pronoun Objects before the Verb in Declarative, Interrogative, and Negative Sentences.

Review rules for their position, relatively to the verb and to each other.

Remark. — Great attention must be given in this exercise to *word order*; remember that the *negative* or *interrogative* forms of sentences do not affect the *position* of object pronouns before the verb; see also the remark for Exercise 8.

Exercise 9.

1. Have you bought my books? Can you send them to me? 2. My brother has lent me this beautiful book; he¹ has not given it to me; he has only lent it to me. 3. Have you told him² that I am here? Yes, I have.³ 4. Have you told⁴ your sister that I found⁵ her book? No, I have not.⁶ 5. Why

have you not told her?⁶ 6. Because I have entirely forgotten it. I will tell⁷ her directly. 7. Where are my gloves? Here they are⁸ on the table. 8. Why did you not bring⁹ them to me? 9. I have asked you to lend me a book. 10. You have not yet sent it to me. When are you going to send it to me? 11. I should like very much to¹⁰ send it to you; but I have already lent it. 12. I should like very much to¹⁰ read it when you can¹¹ lend it to me. 13. Here is a book for your sister. Will¹² you give it to her? 14. Why do you not give it to her yourself?¹³ 15. She has brought him a present. Has she not given it to him? 16. I shall show it to you. 17. You have promised it to them. 18. She will send it to us. 19. We shall tell it to him. 20. You have borrowed my dictionary; can you return it to me? 21. I shall send it to you right away, if you wish.

¹ translate the whole sentence in following order: 'he (*ne*) to me it has not given; he to me it has only lent.' ² see note 8 under Exercise 8. ³ this unfinished sentence must be translated thus: 'yes, I it to him have told.' ⁴ insert *à*. ⁵ use past indefinite. ⁶ construe: 'why (*ne*) it to her have you not told?' ⁷ insert 'it.' ⁸ *les voici*. ⁹ for tense, see note 5; for word order, see note 6. ¹⁰ *je voudrais bien*: no preposition precedes following infinitive. ¹¹ future of *pouvoir*. ¹² 'will,' in the sense of 'wishing,' 'wanting,' is translated by *vouloir*. ¹³ construe: 'why (*ne*) it to her give you not yourself?'

! b. Personal Pronoun Objects of Verbs in the Imperative Mood.

Review rule for the position and forms of personal pronouns used as objects of verbs in the *negative* and *affirmative* forms of the *imperative mood*.

Remark. — Observe that when the imperative is in the *affirmative*, the word order is exactly the same in both French and English; when it is *negative*, the French order is observed.

Exercise 10.

1. Let me hear¹ from you soon. 2. Who wants this pretty flower? Give it to me; don't give it to him.² 3. Give it to

us; don't give it to them.³ 4. If you still⁴ have your brother's book, lend it to me, and I shall return it to you to-morrow. 5. I shall send it to you, but do not tell it to him.⁵ 6. Have you forgotten to send those letters to the Post Office? 7. Don't forget to send them⁶ to-morrow morning. 8. Bring him⁶ a glass, or rather bring it to me. 9. Don't bring me any coffee. 10. Give her⁶ the book, but don't show her⁶ the letter. 11. Wait⁷ for me at the foot⁸ of the stairs. 12. Don't make me wait⁹ very long. 13. Don't look⁷ at me while I do this. 14. This horse is wild; don't ride him. 15. This lady has done¹⁰ you a service; thank her politely. 16. Do not interrupt me; answer me or not¹¹ as you like.¹² 17. Do not leave me thus; look at me squarely¹³ and finish what¹⁴ you have to¹⁵ say. 18. Choose your friends well;⁴ render them⁶ every¹⁶ possible service. 19. Let us return to them good¹⁷ for evil; let us not return¹⁸ evil for evil. 20. My son, listen⁷ to me well; do not force me to¹⁵ be too severe toward you.¹⁹

¹ 'give me soon of your news.' ² construe: '(ne) it to him give not (pas).' ³ same word order as in note 2. ⁴ place after the verb. ⁵ insert *y*, standing for the adverbial phrase, 'to the Post Office.' ⁶ use indirect form of pronoun. ⁷ corresponding French verb is transitive and takes no preposition after it. ⁸ *au bas*. ⁹ construe: '(ne) me make not wait,' etc. ¹⁰ *rendre*, followed immediately by *service*. ¹¹ repeat verb and object pronoun. ¹² *le jugerez bon*. ¹³ *bien en face*. ¹⁴ that which. ¹⁵ *à*. ¹⁶ *tous les*; *rendre* here requires the article because *service* is followed by an adjective. ¹⁷ here a noun, and, like 'evil,' requires the definite article. ¹⁸ add 'to them.' ¹⁹ *à votre égard*.

c. Personal Pronoun Objects of Reflexive Verbs in the Imperative Mood.

Remark.—It should be remembered that one of the two pronouns used in reflexive verbs is retained in the imperative; this pronoun is the *object*, not the *subject* of the verb; in the affirmative, it follows the verb; in the negative, it precedes. The pupil would do well to recite, in the negative and interrogative, the imperative of following reflexive verbs before writing the exercise.

Exercise 11.

1. Let¹ us not tire ourselves too much. Let us rest a moment.² 2. Let us not hurry uselessly. 3. Let us not rejoice in³ advance over⁴ a success which is not yet assured. 4. Let us not boast of a thing which is not yet done.⁴ 5. Let us excuse ourselves politely when we disturb some one. 6. Let us not make fun of the unhappy.⁵ 7. You have had⁶ a very hard⁷ journey in⁸ the rain and wind. 8. Change your clothes⁹ first and dry yourself well. 9. Then, after a good supper, go to bed and rest well. 10. Dress yourself¹⁰ quickly; wash your¹¹ hands, face, and neck. 11. Get up early. Apply yourself¹² to study. 12. Don't stop on the way, when you are going to school.

¹ 'let,' found in the first person plural of the imperative mood, is not translated into French. ² *instant*, m. ³ *de*. ⁴ must agree with subject of the verb. ⁵ put in the plural. ⁶ use *faire*. ⁷ *bien pénible*; place after the noun. ⁸ *par*. ⁹ make verb reflexive, and omit 'your clothes.' ¹⁰ put in the second person singular. ¹¹ make verb reflexive and put definite article before nouns. ¹² insert *bien*.

d. En, Y, Le.

Review rules for the use and position of these pronouns.

The following remarks should be noted by the student:—

1. **En** is a compound of **de** and a noun or pronoun. It may have a genitive sense, meaning *of him, of her, of it, of them*, and sometimes, *from him, from her, from it*, etc.; or, a partitive sense, standing for *some* or *any*. Compare this double meaning of **en** with the possessive and partitive meanings of the contracted articles **du, de la, des**. Both have the same functions, the articles corresponding to the possessive forms *of the*, and *'s*, or to the indefinite adjective *some* or *any*; while **en** corresponds to the possessive or genitive case *of him, of her*, etc., or to the indefinite pronoun *some* or *any*.

It should be observed that many French verbs require the preposition *de* where the English equivalent governs *with*, *about*, etc., or *no preposition at all*. In all such cases, the pronoun object of the verb is always *en* in French. In speaking of persons, *en* is less frequently met than *de lui*, *d'elle*, *d'eux*, etc.; whereas *en* is the only proper word to use in speaking of things. *En*, as an adverb, stands for *from that place*, *from there*, *away*. *En* is also a preposition meaning *in*.

2. *Y* is a compound of *à* and a noun or pronoun. As a personal pronoun, it is a dative meaning *to him*, *to her*, *to it*, *to them*. Compare this meaning of *y* with that of the contracted articles *au*, *à la*, *aux*, etc. The resemblance between their nature and uses is the counterpart of that between *du*, *de la*, *des*, and *en*. Also notice that *y*, like *en*, is less used for persons than things. Many French verbs require *à* where the corresponding English verb governs *in*, *of*, etc., or *no preposition at all*. In all such cases, the indirect object pronoun *y* must be used with the French verb.

When *y* stands for *to that place*, *thither*, *there*, it is treated as an adverb.

3. The invariable pronoun *le* should not be confused with *le*, *la*, *les*. The former does not represent a person or thing, but either an *idea* expressed in some preceding sentence, or a *state*, *condition*, or *quality*, previously expressed by some adjective or participle; this accounts for its invariable form.

Exercise 12.

1. I have a few French books; I have six or seven. Have you more? 2. Our French professor¹ has a large number of them in his library. 3. Few boys play² the piano. Most young girls play it. 4. People³ often⁴ give us good advice,⁵ but we do not profit⁶ by it. 5. This young man is wise; he earns much money and he⁷ spends only a part of it. 6. I do not stay in⁸ the city in⁹ the hot⁴ season; I live there only in¹⁰

winter. 7. All boys play² ball. Henry plays almost all the time. 8. In a grate, we³ usually⁴ burn coal; we burn wood in¹¹ it, too. 9. Here is a good omelet; you have tasted of⁸ it, but you have not eaten it.¹² Aren't you hungry? 10. Your proposition is reasonable; I give my consent to it. 11. You have a stick; use¹³ it. 12. She has written that, and I think that she will repent⁶ it. 13. What do you say⁶ about it? 14. I will not tell⁶ you anything about it. 15. This chicken is very tender; will you have some of it? 16. How do you like these gloves? I bought¹⁴ a dozen pairs in Paris. 17. Are you the person who came¹⁴ the other day? Yes, I am.¹⁵ 18. Gentlemen, are you the¹⁶ heirs of the deceased? We are.¹⁵ 19. If I have succeeded, it¹⁷ is to your protection that I owe it.

¹ 'professor of French.' ² when this verb refers to a musical instrument, it governs *de*; when it refers to a game, it takes *à*. ³ *on*. ⁴ place after word modified. ⁵ put in the plural. ⁶ this verb governs *de*. ⁷ construe: 'he (*ne*) of it spend only (= *que*) a part.' ⁸ *à*. ⁹ *pendant*. ¹⁰ omit this word and replace it by the definite article. ¹¹ 'one in (= *à*) it burns also some wood.' ¹² 'of it'; place before verb. ¹³ 'serve yourself of it.' ¹⁴ past indefinite. ¹⁵ this and all similar sentences must be completed by the insertion of *le*, *la*, *les*, or *le* according to what they represent; see remark (3) under *En*, *Y*, *Le*. ¹⁶ omit this word; 'heirs' is here used adjectively. ¹⁷ *ce*.

Exercise 13 (Same Subject).

1. Madam, are you the mother of that charming child? Yes, sir, I am.¹ 2. Are you a² mother? No, I am not.¹ 3. Are you the bride and groom?³ We are.¹ 4. Are you⁴ married? We are¹ not. 5. This great crime was⁵ useless, as crimes always⁶ are.¹ 6. Men love riches and honors; they aspire to them all their lives.⁷ 7. The man gifted⁸ with great talents almost always abuses⁹ them. 8. You have rendered me a¹⁰ service, and I¹¹ am grateful⁸ for it. 9. Force is brutal; man must¹² not abuse it. 10. My exercise is done; I have devoted a great deal of time to it. 11. I am pleased⁸ with it;

I do not find any more mistakes in ¹³ it. 12. The ¹⁴ more I study sciences, the more difficulties I find in them. 13. Eloquence is a gift of nature, but art adds perfection to it. 14. Wit is the flower of imagination ; judgment is its ¹⁵ fruit.

¹ see note 15 under preceding exercise. ² see note 16 under preceding exercise. ³ *les mariés*. ⁴ 'you' stands here for more than one, hence agreement in the plural of past participle. ⁵ past definite. ⁶ place after word modified. ⁷ singular. ⁸ this adjective governs *de*. ⁹ this verb governs *de*. ¹⁰ omit this word. ¹¹ insert 'to you.' ¹² use *devoir*. ¹³ *à*. ¹⁴ construe thus: 'more I study the sciences, more I in them (= *y*) discover some (= *de*) difficulties.' ¹⁵ 'of it is the fruit.'

c. Direct and Indirect Object Pronouns combined with 'En' and 'Y' after Verbs in the Imperative Mood.

Remark. — In the following exercise, only affirmative forms of the imperative verbs are given; the pupil will remember that in such sentences the direct object in French, as in English, precedes the indirect. When, however, the indirect object is *nous* or *vous*, the best grammatical usage requires that these pronouns shall immediately follow the verb, thus: "Si le dîner est prêt, servez-nous-le." It would not be positively wrong, however, to say, "servez-le-nous."

Exercise 14.

1. I have not yet seen the "Jardin des Plantes"; take ¹ me ² there when you go ³ there for a walk.⁴ 2. What do you feel? Tell ⁵ me ; speak without disguise.⁶ 3. Go get the books that were given ⁷ to you and show them to us. 4. Since you know the lesson that your teacher has told you to learn, recite it to us. 5. You go very often to the theatre ; take ¹ us there next ⁸ Saturday. 6. When you have ⁹ news of your brother, let us know.⁹ 7. Take some cotton and put ¹⁰ some in your ¹¹ ear. 8. Take some cold ⁸ ashes and put ¹² some on the cut. 9. If any one renders you a service, pay it back ¹³ to him in ¹⁴ gratitude. 10. If you still have ¹⁵ any pens of this make, sell me a box of them.¹⁶ 11. When you go ³ out, tell me so.¹⁷ 12. This

fable is very pretty ; recite it for¹⁸ us. 13. Work is the source of happiness ; devote yourself to it with zeal. 14. You cannot go to London yourself ; send me¹⁹ in your place. 15. You have my hat ; give it back to me. 16. This ink is too thick ; put²⁰ some water in it.

¹ 'take,' in the sense of 'conducting' a person or animal, is translated by *conduire* or *mener* ; in the sense of 'carrying' something, it is translated by *porter*. ² when, in the imperative affirmative, *moi* and *toi* precede *en* or *y*, they change, for the sake of euphony, to *m'* and *t'*. ³ a present tense in English, implying future action, must be translated by a future in French. ⁴ 'for a walk' = *vous y promener*. ⁵ insert *le*. ⁶ use infinitive of verb. ⁷ use active voice, thus : 'that one to you has given.' ⁸ place after noun. ⁹ construe : 'make us them to know.' ¹⁰ make this verb reflexive ; place 'some' after it as in English. ¹¹ change to the definite article. ¹² *s'appliquer*. ¹³ omit this word. ¹⁴ *par la*. ¹⁵ *s'il vous reste encore*. ¹⁶ say, 'of them a box.' ¹⁷ replace this word by *le*. ¹⁸ *à*. ¹⁹ insert 'there' and change the preposition 'in' to *à*. ²⁰ 'put in (= *à*) it some water.'

7. DISJUNCTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The disjunctive forms of personal pronouns are used : —

1. When the verb is absent or understood. Ex. : Qui frappe ?
Moi = *who knocks* ? *I*. Il est plus grand que *moi* = *he is taller than I*.
2. After the verb *être* : *c'est toi*, *c'est lui*, etc. = *it is thou*, *it is he*.
3. In compound subjects or objects composed of two pronouns, or nouns and pronouns : Marie et *moi*, nous irons vous voir = *Mary and I will go to see you*.
4. When the subject pronoun is separated from the verb : *eux* qui sont mes amis, me conseilleront = *they who are my friends will advise me*.
5. For emphasis, with another pronoun of the same person : *toi*, tu n'aimes pas le café ; *moi*, je l'aime = *you don't like coffee ; I do*.
6. The disjunctives are especially used as objects of prepositions : venez avec *moi* = *come with me*.

For *moi*, *toi*, etc., used in the imperative mood, see exercise on *Pronouns as Objects of Verbs in the Imperative*, page 12.

The disjunctive forms of personal pronouns combine with the word *même*, *mêmes* to form the compound personal pronouns *myself*, *thyself*, etc. They are used chiefly for emphasis.

Exercise 15.

1. You ask who did¹ that? It² was³ I. 2. My brother is handsomer than I, but I am taller than he. 3. I, who have written it,⁴ ought⁵ to know what it is.⁶ 4. All the family had promised⁷ to come, but he alone was⁸ present. 5. He deceives me⁹ who am his friend. 6. I will reward them⁹ and their families.¹⁰ 7. She says that she has lost her book; you and I will look for it. 8. I assure you that it² is not he who has revealed this secret. 9. You read very well, and yet you will¹¹ not read before me. 10. If you are going to¹² Europe, why do you not start with me? 11. Every one has his preference; you love music, he¹³ loves painting. 12. If your sisters can not accompany you, come without them. 13. I am a¹⁴ slave, — I who was⁸ born to¹⁵ command. 14. He hates us,⁹ who have given him so many proofs of friendship. 15. I will speak to him myself. 16. Your father and I¹⁶ have only one¹⁷ desire, namely,¹⁸ your happiness. 17. I¹⁸ will teach you to respect your parents! 18. Who accuses this man, — he or you? 19. I will tell him myself the cause of his misfortunes. 20. Your father and he have long¹⁹ been enemies.²⁰

¹ past indefinite. ² *ce*. ³ present tense. ⁴ repeat 'I' before 'ought.'
⁵ conditional present of *devoir*. ⁶ *ce que c'est*. ⁷ pluperfect. ⁸ imperfect.
⁹ because this pronoun is emphatic, it must be expressed twice in French, — once as a conjunctive before the verb, and again as a disjunctive after the verb. ¹⁰ *les leurs*. ¹¹ use *vouloir*, because 'will' here stands for 'to be willing.'
¹² before names of countries or continents, 'to' is translated by *en*, and the definite article is omitted. ¹³ see rule 5. ¹⁴ omit this word.
¹⁵ before infinitives, 'to' used in the sense of 'in order to,' 'for the purpose of,' must always be translated by *pour*. ¹⁶ insert *nous*, because the subjects are of different persons. ¹⁷ *ne . . . qu'un seul*. ¹⁸ *c'est*. ¹⁹ 'long' is here an adverb; use *longtemps*, and place after participle. ²⁰ add *l'un de l'autre*.

8. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>		<i>Masc.</i>	<i>Fem.</i>
mine:	le mien	la mienne	mine:	les miens	les miennes
thine:	le tien	la tienne	thine:	les tiens	les tiennes
his, hers, its:	le sien	la sienne	his, hers, its:	les siens	les siennes
ours:	le nôtre	la nôtre	ours:	les nôtres	les nôtres
yours:	le vôtre	la vôtre	yours:	les vôtres	les vôtres
theirs:	le leur	la leur	theirs:	les leurs	les leurs

These pronouns agree in gender and number with the nouns for which they stand; their use should not be confused with that of the adjectives *mon, ton, son*, etc., which always accompany the noun. When 'of' and 'to' precede the English pronouns 'mine,' 'his,' 'yours,' etc., the French prepositions *de* and *à* contract with the articles standing before the pronouns, excepting in the case of the feminine singular form; thus, *du mien, au mien, des miennes, aux vôtres*, etc.

Le mien, le tien, etc., are used for 'mine,' 'thine,' etc. But in such expressions as 'is mine,' meaning 'belongs to me,' *à moi, à toi*, are just as commonly used. Ex.: *à qui sont ces gants? Ils sont à moi = whose gloves are these? They are mine.*

The English phrases 'a friend of mine,' 'a cousin of yours,' cannot be rendered literally in French; translate thus: *un de mes amis, une de vos cousines*.

Les miens, les tiens, les vôtres, etc., are sometimes used in French to designate one's immediate family or nearest relatives. Ex.: *je suis tout dévoué aux miens = I am entirely devoted to my family.*

Exercise 16.

1. We love our children as you love yours.
2. The productions of nature are varied; every country has its own.¹
3. Your confidence deserves mine.
4. Great men are rare; yet, all civilized² nations have theirs.
5. The ancients have

their masterpieces³; we have ours. 6. Your pupils have been surpassed⁴ by several of ours. 7. I have always sacrificed my interests to hers.⁵ 8. It was⁶ a friend of yours who announced⁷ the good news⁸ to me. 9. Your garden touches⁹ mine. 10. The troubles of our friends are our own.¹⁰ 11. He has accepted my services, and now¹¹ he refuses me his. 12. Every one has his lot; work is hers.⁵ 13. I have received your letter, dated¹² the fifth¹³ of February; have you received mine? 14. The ancient¹⁴ orators excelled¹⁵ ours. 15. Your friends are esteemed⁴ by¹⁶ mine. 16. You have your peculiarities; who has not his? 17. The hypocrite flatters our vices in order that we may approve¹⁷ of his. 18. The English navy is superior to ours.

¹ 'its own' must be translated by third person feminine plural form of possessive pronoun. ² participial adjectives agree with their nouns, and usually follow. ³ in compound nouns, made up of two nouns connected by a preposition, the first noun only, as a rule, takes the mark of the plural.* ⁴ must agree with subject of the verb. ⁵ agrees with 'interests,' not with the gender of person spoken of. ⁶ present tense. ⁷ *m'a fait part de*. ⁸ singular. ⁹ insert *à*. ¹⁰ 'ours.' ¹¹ *voici qu'*. ¹² *en date du*. ¹³ use cardinal numeral, omit preposition and write 'February' with small letter. ¹⁴ after the noun. ¹⁵ *l'emportent sur*. ¹⁶ 'by,' after verbs of feeling, is usually translated by *de*. ¹⁷ *applaudir à*.

9. DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Celui (masc. sing.), celle (fem. sing.) = that, that of, the one.

Celui qui, celle qui = he who, she who, the one who *or* which.

Ceux (masc. pl.) celles (fem. pl.) = those, those of, the ones.

Ceux qui, celles qui = they who, those who, the ones who *or* which.

These forms of the demonstrative pronoun stand for some *definite* person or object. They frequently express the possessive case of the nouns for which they stand, and thus correspond

* The recent ministerial decree states that such compound nouns may be written without the hyphen, and that their component parts, as regards the formation of their plural, may be governed by the ordinary laws of syntax. Ex.: *un chef d'œuvre, des chefs d'œuvre*.

to the 's in English. Ex.: j'ai entendu votre voix et celle de votre sœur = *I heard your voice and your sister's*.

They also frequently add a limiting or descriptive sense to the noun for which they stand. In such cases, the pronouns are followed by some adjective phrase or relative clause. Ex.: vous admirez la robe de soie, et moi, celle de velours; je crains ceux qui ne craignent pas Dieu; cette rose est celle que je préfère. When the sense of celui, celle, ceux, celles, is thus already limited by the addition of a possessive or descriptive phrase or clause, they cannot be followed by -ci or -là.

Exercise 17.

1. Your brother's library is large,¹ but my father's² is better³ selected. 2. That man has spent his fortune and that of his wife. 3. My cows give more milk than those of my neighbor. 4. This dress is better³ made⁴ than your sister's.² 5. The faults of Peter the Great were⁵ those of a soldier; and his virtues those of a great man. 6. The books that you sent⁶ me are not those that I bought.⁶ 7. The one who is mistaken does not like to admit⁷ his⁸ error. 8. The climate of⁹ Europe is temperate; that of⁹ Africa is torrid. 9. The comedies of Molière are superior to those of Terence. 10. The eloquence of Cicero is not comparable to that of Demosthenes. 11. Those who love danger will perish in¹⁰ it. 12. This man is the one who struck¹¹ me. 13. Cotton¹² sheets are less expensive than linen ones.¹³ 14. I admire the exploits of Bayard, but I admire¹⁴ still more those of Turenne.

¹ *nombreuse*. ² 'that of my father.' ³ 'better' is here an adverb; must it be rendered by *mieux* or *meilleur*? ⁴ apply rule for agreement of participles conjugated with *être*. ⁵ imperfect. ⁶ put verb in past indefinite; apply rule for agreement of participles conjugated with *avoir*. ⁷ *reconnaître*. ⁸ *son* or *sa*? ⁹ insert definite article. ¹⁰ *à*. ¹¹ past indefinite. ¹² 'the sheets of cotton.' ¹³ 'those of.' ¹⁴ 'admire still more' = *j'estime davantage*.

Celui-ci (masc. sing.) = this one	celui-là (masc. sing.) = that one.
Celle-ci (fem. sing.) = this one	celle-là (fem. sing.) = that one.
Ceux-ci (masc. pl.) = these	ceux-là (masc. pl.) = those.
Celles-ci (fem. pl.) = these	celles-là (fem. pl.) = those.

These pronouns, like the first forms given, are used to represent persons or things previously mentioned in the sentence; they stand for something known and have a definite antecedent. Their inflections for gender and number prove this fact. **Celui-ci, celle-ci, celui-là, celle-là**, etc., are used only to bring out the contrast between things compared, replacing the emphasis given in English by the two distinct forms *this* and *that*, lacking in French. Ex.: *this one is white, that one is black* = **celui-ci est blanc, celui-là est noir**.

These emphatic forms of the pronoun also translate the words *former* and *latter*; **celui-là, celle-là, ceux-là, celles-là** standing for *the former*; **celui-ci, celle-ci, ceux-ci, celles-ci**, for *the latter*.

Exercise 18.

1. Look at¹ these beautiful roses! This one is budding, that one is in full bloom.² 2. You have given me my³ choice of these books; I will take these for my brother and those for myself.⁴ 3. This diamond⁵ is more brilliant⁶ than that one. 4. What a difference between these two brothers! The⁷ one is ignorant, the other⁸ is well educated. 5. Bossuet and Fénelon are eloquent; the latter is fascinating; the former is persuasive. 6. I know⁹ these two men; I despise the one,⁷ and fear the other.⁸ 7. I have brought two cushions; which one will you have,¹⁰ this one or that one? 8. This one is too large and that one is too hard. 9. Here are several hats; try on this one. 10. This one is not becoming to me¹¹; I will take that one. 11. The rose and the tulip are two lovely¹² flowers, but the latter is without fragrance, while¹³ the former exhales a delicious fragrance.

- ¹ voyez. ² tout épanouie. ³ le. ⁴ moi. ⁵ add -ci. ⁶ a plus de feu.
⁷ 'this one.' ⁸ 'that one.' ⁹ savoir or connaître? ¹⁰ voulez-vous?
¹¹ ne me sied pas. ¹² charmantes; place after the noun. ¹³ et.

Ceci = this. Cela = that.

These pronouns have no inflections for gender and number because, unlike *celui, celle*, etc., they never stand for any person or thing previously mentioned in the sentence. They either refer to *something pointed to* by the speaker, literally or figuratively, as: *avez-vous lu cela?* or, they represent *a clause, phrase, or idea just expressed or about to be*, as: *vous le demandez et cela est impossible* = *you ask it and it is impossible*.

Exercise 19.

1. Have you learned this? Yes, but I have not learned that.
2. That is a very great misfortune.
3. Have you copied all this and all that?
4. I have finished this, but I have not quite¹ finished that.
5. Did you see² that? Where did you find³ this?
6. That is not easy to explain.
7. This is a family relic.⁴
8. This will cost you much more than that.
9. You assure me that⁵ he is my friend; that is quite⁶ possible.
10. That is an invention of his enemies.
11. That is a very pretty compliment.
12. You desire that I should be⁷ his friend, but that is impossible.
13. Don't forget to send me this.
14. Read this and tell me what⁸ you think⁹ of it.
15. Pride is a great fault, remember¹⁰ that.
16. My dear children, understand¹¹ this: work is a treasure.
17. If you are selfish, you will never¹² have any¹³ friends, remember that.

¹ tout-à-fait; place as in English between auxiliary and participle.
² past indefinite. ³ 'relic of family.' ⁴ here a conjunction; translate by *que*. ⁵ *fort*. ⁶ this verb depends on *désirer*, a verb of sentiment; translate by subjunctive present of *être*. ⁷ *ce que*. ⁸ *penser* here takes *de*, not *à*, because the verb means 'to have an opinion of.' ⁹ *retenez bien*.
¹⁰ *écoutex bien*. ¹¹ place after verb. ¹² *de*.

10. WHEN TO USE 'CE,' WHEN 'IL,' BEFORE 'ÊTRE.'

The pronouns *he, she, it, they, this, that, these, those*, are translated by *ce* or *c'* before *être*, when these words are representative subjects and serve to introduce the real, logical subject which, in such cases, follows the verb.

Examples : *he is my friend* = *c'est mon ami*; *she is her cousin* = *c'est sa cousine*; *it is your hat* = *c'est votre chapeau*; *they or these are not my gloves* = *ce ne sont pas mes gants*; *it is he* = *c'est lui*; *those are mine* = *ce sont les miens*; *it is that one* = *c'est celui-là*; *seeing is believing* = *voir c'est croire*; *will you come?* = *est-ce que vous viendrez?* *it is here* = *c'est ici*; *that is enough* = *c'est assez*; *to-day is Monday* = *c'est aujourd'hui lundi*; *to-morrow is the fourth* = *ce sera demain le quatre*.

Rule I. — Translate *he, she, it, they, this, that, these, those*, by *ce* or *c'* before *être*, when this verb is followed by a *noun, pronoun, infinitive, noun clause, adverb of place or quantity, or date idiom*.

Exception. — *He, she, it* are translated by *il, elle, ils, elles* before *être* followed by a predicate noun, when the English pronouns are emphatic, or when a certain shade of feeling enters into the statement. Ex.: *he is your father* = *il est votre père*.

Rule II. — When *he, she, it, they* are the real, logical subjects of the verb, standing for definite and expressed antecedents, they are translated before *être* by *il, elle, ils, elles*. The verb, in this case, is followed by an *adjective or attribute, an adjective phrase or clause*.

For *ce* + *qui* or *que* standing for *what*, see chapter on *Relative Pronouns*, page 31.

Exception. — *Ce* is found before *être*, followed by an *adjective*, in only one case, namely when *ce* means *cela*, and can be changed to *cela* without altering the sense. In this case, *ce*, like *cela*, refers to *something pointed to*, or to *an antecedent understood but not expressed*. Ex.: *Comment trouvez-vous cela?* *c'est magnifique, or*

cela est magnifique. When used parenthetically, both *il* and *ce* are used with the clause 'it is true' = *il est vrai*.

Il translates *it* and also *there* in all impersonal constructions: *it is time to start* = *il est temps de partir*; *there came a man to our village* = *il vint un homme*, etc.

Il is also used as *subject* of all *real impersonal verbs*: *it seems, it rains, it matters* = *il semble, il pleut, il importe*, etc. When the verb is *not a true impersonal*, *cela* is used: *it hurts me to see you this way* = *cela me fait de la peine de vous voir ainsi*.

Exercise 20.

1. It is hope that sustains man in adversity.¹ 2. It is your friendship that I prize. 3. Here is the book that I found;² it is your sister's. 4. No, it is not hers, it is mine. 5. The counsel is good, but it is not new. 6. It is a misfortune³ not to have⁴ any friends. 7. It is your sister who deserves⁵ praise. 8. It is in adversity that one recognizes the true⁶ friend. 9. It was⁷ your aunt whom I met⁸ in Europe. 10. It is ambition which causes the ruin of so many men. 11. It is to God that we owe all the blessings⁹ which¹⁰ we enjoy. 12. It was¹¹ the Egyptians who invented² arithmetic. 13. The principal quality which distinguishes the French¹² language¹³ is clearness. 14. It is you whom I desire¹⁴ to see. 15. It is the one or the other of these two men who betrayed² the secret. 16. It often happens¹⁵ that vice spoils the happiest disposition.¹⁶ 17. It takes¹⁷ great courage to¹⁸ stand injustice. 18. It is virtue that makes heroes. 19. It is beautiful to die for one's¹⁹ country. 20. We must²⁰ work when we²⁰ are young. 21. It is we¹¹ who make²² ourselves unhappy. 22. It is friendship that makes all the charms²³ of life.

¹ *au milieu des revers*. ² past indefinite. ³ place *de* after this word. ⁴ place both negatives (*ne point*) before infinitive. ⁵ insert 'some' and put noun in the plural. ⁶ *véritable*; place after noun. ⁷ present. ⁸ past indefinite of *connaître*. ⁹ *avantage*, m. pl. ¹⁰ 'of which' (*dont*) because *jouir* takes *de*. ¹¹ put this verb in the present; when *être* is

preceded by *ce* and followed by a plural noun or a pronoun of the third person, the verb becomes plural,* but it remains singular if the pronoun is of the first or second person plural. ¹² adjectives of nationality follow nouns. ¹³ insert *c'*, which is used here to give emphasis to the expression. ¹⁴ this verb requires no preposition before infinitives. ¹⁵ *arriver* (impersonal); place adverb after it. ¹⁶ *naturels*, m. pl. ¹⁷ *falloir*; place *un* after verb. ¹⁸ *pour*. ¹⁹ *sa*. ²⁰ *falloir*, followed by infinitive. ²¹ *on*. ²² *se rendre*. ²³ singular.

Exercise 21 (Same Subject).

1. It is hard ¹ to be good to ² the wicked.³ 2. It is imprudent ¹ to speak of the faults of others. 3. It is possible that ours are ⁴ greater. 4. It takes ⁵ strength of soul to endure good ⁶ and evil fortune. 5. It is sweet ¹ to love those whom one must ⁷ respect.⁴ 6. It is we who shape our destinies.⁸ 7. I believe that it will rain to-morrow. 8. It is we whom you accuse unjustly of this crime. 9. It is late; we must ⁹ go home. 10. It is already half past four.¹⁰ 11. It is better to be ignorant than to ¹¹ know evil. 12. It is useless ¹ to speak to her; she will not listen to you. 13. It is glorious ¹ to conquer ¹² one's passions. 14. It is true that I ought to have ¹³ confessed my fault. 15. It is too damp in this house. 16. It is proper that you ¹⁴ should return ⁴ their visit. 17. I did not read your book because it is not interesting. 18. It is certain that he has lost his fortune. 19. It may be ¹⁵ that we shall find ⁴ her at her mother's.¹⁶

¹ this adjective governs *de* before infinitives. ² *avec*. ³ plural. ⁴ subjunctive present. ⁵ *falloir*; insert 'some' before 'strength.' ⁶ use definite article before both adjectives. ⁷ *qu'il faut qu'on*. ⁸ singular. ⁹ *falloir*. ¹⁰ *quatre heures et demie*; before nouns, *demi* is invariable; †

* Even the best writers do not always observe this rule, and hereafter *c'est*, instead of *ce sont*, will be allowable in this case.

† The Minister's decree authorizes the agreement of this adjective with its noun, whether it precedes or follows the noun. When it precedes, the usual hyphen may be omitted.

after a feminine noun, it becomes feminine, but never plural. ¹¹ *que de.*
¹² *surmonter ses.* ¹³ use past conditional of *devoir.* ¹⁴ insert 'to them.'
¹⁵ *se peut.* ¹⁶ *chez.*

11. INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

Qui or qui est-ce qui (emphatic) = *who*, nominative case for persons.

Note. — Quel, quelle, quels, quelles are sometimes used before the verb *to be* for the nominative *who*. Ex.: *who is this lady?* = *qui est cette dame?* or *quelle est cette dame?* In the latter case, *quelle* agrees with the noun *dame* understood.

Qui or qui est-ce que (emphatic) = *whom*, direct object for persons.

Que or qu'est-ce que (emphatic) = *what*, used as direct object only for things.

Qu'est-ce qui = *what*, nominative case for things.

À qui or de qui or à qui est-ce que or de qui est-ce que (emphatic) = *to whom, of whom*, indirect object for persons.

À quoi or de quoi or à quoi est-ce que (emphatic) = *to what, of what*, indirect object for things.

Notice that *que* changes to *qu'* before vowels, but that *qui* and *quoi* are never elided.

The above pronoun forms have no special inflections for masculine or feminine; this would seem to indicate that their function is not to represent a noun previously mentioned. Compare them with *lequel* = *which one* (masc. sing.), *laquelle* (fem. sing.), *lesquels* = *which ones* (masc. pl.), *lesquelles* (fem. pl.), which stand for a noun already mentioned, or about to be, and must agree with it in gender and number.

Study the following list of idiomatic sentences: —

1. À qui est ce livre? = *whose book is this?*
2. Que de bontés! que de bienfaits! = *what kindness! what goodness!*
3. Quoi de plus heureux! = *what could be more fortunate!*
4. Que vous êtes bonne! = *how kind you are!*
5. Quoi! vous êtes encore ici! = *what! you are still here!*
6. Que parlez-vous si haut? = *why do you speak so loud?*
7. Que vous en semble-t-il? = *what do you think of it?*
8. De quoi s'agit-il? = *what is it? what's the matter?*

9. De quoi vous mêlez-vous ? = *what are you meddling with ?*
 10. À quoi bon tant de mystère ? = *what is the use of so much mystery ?*
 11. Qu'est-ce que c'est que la vie ? = *what (emphatic) is life ?*
 12. Qui vous dit que je veuille aller la voir ? = *how do you know or what makes you suppose that I want to go and see her ?*

Learn the following Gallicisms : —

What is it ? = *qu'est-ce or qu'est-ce que c'est ?*

What is that ? = *qu'est-ce que cela or qu'est-ce que c'est que cela ?*

Exercise 23.

In the following exercise, when the pronouns can be rendered by two forms, one emphatic and one unemphatic, give both forms for the sake of drill in their use.

1. Whom do¹ you love? Who loves you? 2. Whom does he admire? What do you want? 3. Of whom do you speak? To whom have you spoken? 4. Who is speaking? Whom do you see? 5. What do you see? Of what do you speak? 6. What do you hear? What are you reading? 7. What page? what line? 8. Of which house are you speaking? 9. What is disturbing you? 10. Who is disturbing you? 11. Which letter do you read? Which one² are you answering? 12. Who wants to play with us? What³ do you want to play? 13. With what shall we write? Whose exercise is this?⁴ 14. What exercise have you written? Which one shall we write to-morrow? 15. Of which one are you speaking? 16. Who is the lady who was speaking? 17. Who is singing? What is he singing? 18. What makes your brother laugh?⁵ 19. What can⁶ I do for you? 20. At whom are you smiling? Of⁷ what are you thinking? 21. What have I done to you? 22. Who told⁸ you that I was⁹ here? 23. Who is knocking? 24. With¹⁰ whom are you living?

¹ remember that emphatic and progressive forms like 'do love,' 'is speaking' are translated into French by the simple present tense of corre-

sponding verb. ² 'to which one.' ³ 'to what.' ⁴ 'to whom is this exercise?' ⁵ compare this English construction with the equivalent French *fait rire votre frère?* ⁶ use *puis* not *peux*, in the interrogative, when subject follows. ⁷ *à*. ⁸ past indefinite. ⁹ imperfect. ¹⁰ *chez*.

Exercise 23 (Same Subject).

1. Which one of these houses did¹ your father² buy?
2. What prevented³ you from coming⁴ last night? 3. What is that?⁵ 4. For whom are you looking? What are you looking at? 5. Which ones are you looking at? 6. What troubles you? What do you mean? 7. Why⁶ don't⁷ you listen to me?
8. How⁸ beautiful your sister is! 9. Whom are you expecting?
10. What⁹ is more terrible than such¹⁰ passions!
11. To which one of these men did¹ you apply? 12. What has happened to your brother? 13. To which one of your friends have you written? 14. Whose¹¹ beautiful rings are these? 15. Of what have you to¹² complain? Of whom have you to complain? 16. With¹³ what are you amusing yourself? 17. In¹⁴ what is she guilty? 18. Of all these editions, which one do you advise me to buy? 19. Of what are you accused?¹⁴ 20. Who told³ you that? What has happened?¹⁵ 21. Which one of these young ladies is he going to marry? 22. What is the use of¹⁶ weeping?⁴ 23. How¹⁷ shall we amuse ourselves? 24. To whom must¹⁸ I return this book? 25. What is the use of¹⁶ so much ceremony? 26. Who has sent me these beautiful flowers? Whose¹¹ gloves are these?

¹ 'did . . . buy'; this emphatic form, especially in the interrogative, is usually translated by the past indefinite; in this case, the participle should agree with object of verb. ² construe: 'your father has he bought.' ³ past indefinite. ⁴ infinitive present. ⁵ see examples of Gallicisms. ⁶ see No. 6 in list of idiomatic sentences. ⁷ render this word by putting *ne* before the verb and omitting *pas*. ⁸ construe 'that (*que*) your sister is beautiful!' ⁹ see No. 3 in list of idiomatic sentences. ¹⁰ *que de telles*. ¹¹ see No. 1 in list of idiomatic sentences. ¹² *à*. ¹³ *en*. ¹⁴ put in the active voice with *on*. ¹⁵ past indefinite of *se passer*. ¹⁶ see No. 10 in list of idiomatic sentences. ¹⁷ 'to what.' ¹⁸ present indicative of *devoir*.

12. RELATIVE OR CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS.

Qui = *who, which, what*, nominative case for persons or things. **Lequel, laquelle**, etc., are sometimes used for **qui**, when the relative pronoun has two antecedent nouns to either of which it might refer.

Qui = *whom*, direct object for persons, when there is no antecedent expressed. Ex. : devinez qui j'ai rencontré aujourd'hui = *guess whom I met to-day*.

À qui, pour qui, auquel, or pour lequel, etc. = object of prepositions for persons. Ex. : l'ami à qui or auquel j'écris = *the friend to whom I am writing*.

Auquel, pour lequel, etc. = only forms as objects of prepositions for things. Ex. : la plume avec laquelle j'écris = *the pen with which I write*.

Que = *whom, which, that*, objective case for persons or things. This pronoun can never be omitted in French.

Dont or **duquel** = *whose, of whom, of which*, possessive case for persons or things; **de qui** is also used for persons. When *whose* is preceded by a preposition, **de qui** or **duquel** must be used, never **dont**. Ex. : *the pupil in whose exercise I found a mistake* = l'élève dans le devoir **duquel** j'ai trouvé une faute. *Whose* in English is never separated from its governing noun; **dont** is frequently so, and always heads the relative clause. Ex. : *I am going to see the friend whose address you have given me* = je vais voir l'ami **dont** vous m'avez donné l'adresse.

De qui, duquel, not **dont**, are used to express *from whom*. Ex. : *the friend from whom I have received this gift* = l'ami **de qui** j'ai reçu ce cadeau.

Dont is used to express the idea of *issuing, of being born, of descending*, with such verbs as 'sortir,' 'descendre,' or their equivalents.

D'où = *from which, whence*, is used to express the *physical action of coming out*. Ex. : la chambre **d'où** je sors = *the room from which I come*.

Quoi is an indefinite relative, referring to some such antecedent as *ce, rien, chose, voici, voilà*, and is only used after prepositions. Ex. : *voici de quoi il s'agit* = *this is the question* ; je voudrais

savoir à quoi vous pensez = *I should like to know of what you are thinking.*

Où is generally used for à or dans and a relative pronoun with reference to place or time. Ex.: la maison où je vous ai connu = *the house where I met you.*

Ce qui = *what (that which)*, nominative case.

Ce que = *what (that which)*, objective case.

Ce dont = *what . . . of.* Ex.: *what I complain of (that of which I complain) = ce dont je me plains.*

Ce à quoi = *what . . . to or with.* Ex.: *what you are amusing yourself with = ce à quoi vous vous amusez.*

Exercise 24.

1. The thing of which I am thinking is very interesting.
2. The merchant for whom I keep¹ books is very rich.
3. I want to know of what you are thinking.
4. Young men talk² of³ what they are doing; old men, of³ what they have done, and fools, of³ what they intend⁴ to do.
5. I know whom you mean.
6. All that⁵ glitters is not gold.⁶
7. You ought⁷ to confess frankly what⁸ you have done.
8. I want to know of whom you are thinking.
9. It is not the dress,⁸ it is not the occupation⁹ of a man¹⁰ that degrades him; it is¹¹ the shameful¹² vices to which he is addicted¹³ and of which he does not want to correct himself.
10. I have read the works which Fénelon has written.¹⁴
11. I know what⁵ you are going to say to me.
12. What¹⁵ God does is well done.
13. He¹⁶ is happy whose¹⁷ heart is pure.
14. He¹⁶ is happy who has a pure¹⁸ heart.
15. We do not admire the things which we are accustomed¹⁴ to see.
16. We do not admire the things to which we are accustomed.¹⁴
17. Vanity is an idol to which we sacrifice everything.
18. It was¹⁸ Racine who introduced¹⁹ into the poetic¹² language of the French²⁰ that richness and²¹ elegance of style to which it owes all its glory.²²
19. You will never¹³ know whom I love.
20. The society which you frequent is not good.
21. The site on which I wish to build is

very large. 22. There is the book about²² which I have²⁴ spoken to you so³ often.³

¹ *tiens les.* ² *disent.* ³ omit this word. ⁴ *se proposent de.* ⁵ stands for 'that which.' ⁶ in this proverb, does the noun 'gold' require the definite article? ⁷ conditional present of *devoir*; no preposition. ⁸ *habît*, m. ⁹ *métier*, m. ¹⁰ 'which degrades a man.' ¹¹ *ce sont.* ¹² after the word modified. ¹³ *il se livre.* ¹⁴ *composer*; should this participle agree? if so, with what? ¹⁵ 'God does well what He does.' ¹⁶ *celui-là.* ¹⁷ 'of whom.' ¹⁸ present. ¹⁹ past indefinite. ²⁰ plural. ²¹ repeat 'that.' ²² *lustre*, m. ²³ *de.* ²⁴ insert *tant*.

Exercise 25 (Same Subject).

1. I do not know on what his pretensions may be founded.¹
 2. I contemplate the marvels which God has created.¹ 3. The means² which he has used³ are³ not honest. 4. He is a man in whose⁴ prudence you can trust. 5. That is what⁵ I am sure of.⁶ 6. What I admire most⁷ is courage in adversity. 7. It is a disease the cause of which⁸ is not known. 8. The friends from whom⁹ you expect so many services will do nothing for you. 9. The family from which¹⁰ he descends is honorable. 10. The spring from which¹⁰ the greatest rivers flow¹¹ is scarcely noticed.¹ 11. There is nothing of which God is¹² not the author, nothing that has¹² not¹³ come out¹⁴ of His¹⁵ hands; we owe Him¹⁵ the light that we enjoy¹⁶ and the air that we breathe. 12. We do not always love the persons whose⁸ talents we admire. 13. What is there¹⁷ more fragile than riches, which,¹⁸ nevertheless, we pursue all our lives?² 14. The laws according to which God has made all things are also those according to which he governs them. 15. The divine promises in which I have always had faith, have comforted me for many griefs.¹⁹ 16. What pleases²⁰ me does not please everybody. 17. Intoxication is the most shameful²¹ state into which²² a man can¹² fall. 18. The body of man returns to the earth whence it came.²³ 19. Health is a blessing without which all²⁴ others are nothing. 20. The wicked man²⁵ rejoices over¹⁶

what causes²⁰ the ruin of others.²¹ 21. The violet, hiding²² under the bush, perfumes everything that comes near²³ it; it is the symbol of the modest²⁴ savant.

¹ see note 14 of Exercise 24. ² singular. ³ past indefinite. ⁴ construe: 'to the prudence of whom'; for the translation of 'of whom' see grammatical notes under *dont*. ⁵ 'that is what' = *voilà*. ⁶ 'that of which,' etc. ⁷ insert *c'*. ⁸ construe: 'of which one knows (*connaître*) not (*point*) the cause.' ⁹ *dont* or *de qui*? ¹⁰ *dont* or *d'où*? ¹¹ *s'échapper*; put verb before subject. ¹² subjunctive present. ¹³ retain *ne* before verb, but omit *pas* because 'nothing' takes its place. ¹⁴ conjugated with *être*. ¹⁵ no capital. ¹⁶ French verb takes *de*. ¹⁷ *qu'y a-t-il de*. ¹⁸ 'after which, nevertheless, we run,' etc. ¹⁹ *de bien des misères*. ²⁰ French verb takes *à*. ²¹ after the noun. ²² *où*. ²³ past indefinite of *sortir*. ²⁴ insert 'the.' ²⁵ omit this word. ²⁶ *faire*. ²⁷ *d'autrui*. ²⁸ use past participle. ²⁹ *approcher*; no preposition.

13. INDEFINITE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS.

Review their forms and uses.

Adjectives.

(Construed with nouns.)

MASCULINE AND FEMININE.

Sing. *chaque* = each, every.

Sing. *quelque* = some, a little.

Pl. *quelques* = some, a few.

Sing. *quelconque* = { whatever;
(after its noun) any ... what-
Pl. *quelconques*. { soever;
some sort of;
any kind of.

Pronouns.

(Construed as nouns.)

Masc. Sing. *chacun*, f. *chacune* = each one, every one.

Masc. Sing. *quelqu'un* = somebody, anybody.

quelques-uns, f. *quelques-unes* = some, a few, several.

Masc. Sing. *quelque chose* = something, anything (in the positive sense).

Masc. Sing. *qui, quiconque* = whoever (used chiefly for persons in the singular).

Masc. Sing. *on, l'on* = one, people, they.

Masc. Sing. **autrui** = others, one's neighbor or fellow-man (only for persons and usually after prepositions). If *others* refers to a distinct noun, and therefore has not a vague or general sense, translate by **autres**.

Masc. Sing. **personne** = anybody, any one; (indef.) nobody, no one (usually with **ne**).

Masc. Sing. **rien** = anything; nothing (usually with **ne**).

Masc. Sing. **l'un l'autre** = each other.

Fem. Sing. **l'une l'autre** = each other.

Masc. Pl. **les uns les autres** = one another.

Fem. Pl. **les unes les autres** = one another.

Adjectives or Pronouns.

Masc. Sing. **nul**, f. **nulle** = no, no one, none (usually with **ne**).

Masc. Sing. **aucun**, f. **aucune** = any one (with reference to a distinct noun); no, no one, nobody, none (usually with **ne**).

Masc. Sing. **tout**, f. **toute** = every, all, any, whole, everything.

Masc. Pl. **tous**, f. **toutes** = all.

Masc. Sing. **tel**, f. **telle** } = such; **un tel** = such a (one).
Masc. Pl. **tels**, f. **telles** }

Masc. Sing. **l'un et l'autre** } = both.
Fem. Sing. **l'une et l'autre** }

Masc. Pl. **les uns et les autres** } = both kinds.
Fem. Pl. **les unes et les autres** }

Remarks. — I. **On** is the most important indefinite pronoun. It translates *one*, *people*, *they*, and *we* when these words have in English a vague,

general, indefinite or impersonal sense. It is frequently found as subject of a verb in the active voice when, in English, the passive voice would be used. Remember that it is used only of persons, always nominatively, and always requires a singular verb.

2. The relatives *qui*, *quel*, *quoi*, *où* form with a following *que* indefinite pronominal phrases: *qui que* = *whoever*; *quel que* = *whatever* and *quoi que* = *whatever*; *où que* = *wherever*. Ex.: *qui que vous soyez*, *quelle que soit votre fortune*, *quel que vous disiez* = *whoever you may be*, *whatever may be your fortune*, *whatever you may say*.

Exercise 26.

1. No one¹ is² perfect here below. 2. When one seeks truth, one finds it. 3. Both of³ them⁴ came⁴ to see my father. 4. Put these books back each one in its⁵ place. 5. No man⁶ is² a³ prophet in his own³ country. 6. I do not know any one who is⁷ exempt from faults. 7. They have loved⁸ each other since their childhood. 8. Did any one⁹ come¹⁰ to see me? Nobody came² to see you. 9. We must help¹¹ one another. 10. Every man has some¹² qualities of which he is proud. 11. I hear a¹³ noise in that room; I am sure that there is some one there.³ 12. Whoever is envious and mean is naturally sad. 13. No man is² perfectly happy. 14. Men pass one¹⁴ half of their life in¹⁵ regretting the other. 15. We all¹⁶ have strength enough to¹⁷ bear the ills of others. 16. No one has² ever seriously doubted¹⁸ the existence of God. 17. The jealous man⁸ loves no one. 18. I have never seen such¹⁹ audacity. 19. No path of flowers leads² to glory. 20. Speak and we²⁰ shall listen to you. 21. I want to read something; give me any²¹ book.

¹ *nul* or *personne*. ² put *ne* before the verb and omit *pas* because the subject is a negative word. ³ omit this word. ⁴ past indefinite; make participle agree with subject. ⁵ *à sa*. ⁶ *nul*. ⁷ present subjunctive. ⁸ *s'aiment*. ⁹ unlike 'any one' in sentence 6, 'any one' has here a positive sense, and is equivalent to 'some one'; use *quelqu'un*. ¹⁰ past indefinite. ¹¹ a verb followed by 'each other,' 'one another,' must be put in the reflexive form in French. ¹² 'some' has here a more emphatic

or restrictive sense than would be implied by *des*; use indefinite adjective. ¹³ *du*. ¹⁴ *la*. ¹⁵ *à*; must be followed by infinitive present. ¹⁶ 'we have all enough of.' ¹⁷ *pour*. ¹⁸ insert *de*. ¹⁹ 'a such.' ²⁰ *l'on*; verb in the singular. ²¹ 'any' is here emphatic, standing for *any kind of*.

Exercise 27 (Same Subject).

1. No one is¹ foolish enough² to³ believe him. 2. Every one believes himself better than his neighbor. 3. Did you meet any one?⁴ 4. I have not read anything⁵ interesting. 5. One recognizes great writers by⁶ the simplicity of their style. 6. Each one of us hopes. None of you will succeed.¹ 7. Give me⁷ other reasons. 8. Each passion speaks a different language.⁸ 9. Men sacrifice everything to their passions. 10. No one is¹ wise at all times.⁹ 11. This pupil is not making any progress.¹⁰ 12. I have not received any¹¹ of the letters that you have written¹² to me. 13. Birds seem to talk¹³ to one another.¹⁴ 14. There is never¹⁵ anybody at your house. 15. Men judge¹³ one another ill.¹⁶ 16. The two adversaries seized¹³ each other. 17. No troops¹⁰ were¹⁷ better disciplined¹² than those of Napoleon. 18. Every one is always indulgent to³ himself.¹⁸ 19. We must bear patiently with the faults of others. 20. I saw¹⁹ something⁵ pretty to-day.

¹ see note 2 under Exercise 26. ² here an adverb of degree; place before the adjective and omit *de*. ³ *pour*. ⁴ see note 9 under Exercise 26. ⁵ 'nothing,' 'not anything,' 'something' require *de* before adjectives; in compound tenses, the negative forms are placed between auxiliary and participle. ⁶ *à*. ⁷ insert *d'*. ⁸ *langue* (f.) is the language or idiom of a particular nation: *langage* (m.) is the general term, signifying the manner in which one expresses his thought. ⁹ *à toute heure*. ¹⁰ this word is commonly used in the plural; adjective must agree. ¹¹ feminine singular. ¹² is there agreement or not? ¹³ see note 11 of Exercise 26. ¹⁴ construe: 'the ones to the others,' and note the position of 'to' in the two languages. ¹⁵ what are the three negatives required in this sentence? ¹⁶ adverb follows verb. ¹⁷ past definite. ¹⁸ the reflexive pronoun is *soi-même*, not *lui-même*, when the subject of the verb is an indefinite pronoun. ¹⁹ past indefinite.

14. 'TOUT,' 'MÊME,' 'QUELQUE,' 'QUEL QUE.'

Tout may be an *adjective*, a *pronoun*, an *adverb*, or a *noun*. It is an adjective, and consequently variable, when it directly precedes the noun. In this case, it has the sense of *every* or *any* when these words might be replaced by *all*, followed by a plural. When accompanied by an article or pronoun, it means *all*, *all the*, *the whole*, *a whole*. The plural *tous* translates *all*, *every*.

Tout is a pronoun and variable when it translates *everything* or *all*, not followed by a noun. As a noun, it means *the whole*, *the whole thing*. Ex.: Je prendrai le tout = *I will take the whole*.

Tout is an adverb, and invariable, when it modifies an adjective, participle, or other adverb. It is then translated by *quite*, *very*, *wholly*, *entirely*, *rather*. For the sake of euphony, **tout** becomes *toute* or *toutes*, when followed by feminine singular or plural adjectives beginning with a consonant or aspirated 'h.'*

Même may be an *adjective* or an *adverb*. It is an adjective, and consequently variable, when it limits a noun. Placed before the noun, it means *same*; placed after the noun, it means *very*. Ex.: la même leçon = *the same lesson*; ce jour même = *that very day*. It is also joined to the disjunctive personal pronouns *moi*, *toi*,† etc., and translates *self*, *selves*.

Même is an *adverb* and invariable when it modifies a verb, an adjective, or participle. It then translates *even*, *even though*. When modifying a verb, it usually follows it.

Quelque may be an *adjective* or an *adverb*. It is an adjective and variable when it limits a noun. It then translates *some*, *a little* (in the plural *a few*), and is more restrictive in sense than the partitive articles *du*, *de la*, *des*.

Quelque . . . que is an *adverb* and invariable when it modifies an adjective or an adverb. As an adverb, it means *however*. Ex.: quelque habile que vous soyez = *however clever you may*

* The Minister's decree authorizing the agreement of **tout** before feminine adjectives beginning with a vowel or silent 'h,' has since been nullified by the decision of the French Academy.

† The usual hyphen which serves to connect these pronouns with the word **même**, **mêmes** may hereafter be omitted.

de. Tout . . . *que* is also used with this meaning. With a numeral, it means *some*. Ex.: il y a quelque cinquante ans = *some fifty years ago*.

Quel *que*, quelle *que*, quels *que*, quelles *que*, written in two words and found before verbs, means *whatever* and agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb. Ex.: quels *que* soient vos talents . . . , quels (talents) *que* soient vos talents = *whatever your talents may be*.

Exercise 28.

1. Any woman will understand that. 2. Everything has its place. 3. Every child loves playing.¹ 4. Everything depends upon² education. 5. We can start; the boats are all³ ready. 6. These ladies are quite⁴ happy. 7. This young lady is quite⁴ confused, quite⁴ ashamed. 8. She was⁵ quite surprised to see me. 9. The whole⁶ house burned,⁷ and they have lost everything.⁸ 10. All⁶ serpents are not venomous. 11. We all⁹ have the same origin. 12. The same causes produce the same effects. 13. Even¹⁰ the wicked¹¹ respect virtue. 14. Some crimes always⁹ precede great crimes. 15. The gods themselves became⁵ jealous of the shepherds. 16. Gentleness captivates all⁶ hearts. 17. We¹² must obey the laws, though⁸ unjust. 18. I received⁷ your telegram the very day of my arrival. 19. Mothers love even³ the faults of their children. 20. He has some talents; he will make his way. 21. However⁸ good your reasons⁹ may be, they will not be heard.¹³ 22. Whatever¹⁴ human beings may be, we must¹⁵ live with them. 23. We lost⁷ some five hundred men in that engagement. 24. It is easy to deceive even³ the most clever.¹¹ 25. Rome adopted⁵ all the gods and all the superstitions of the peoples whom she had vanquished.¹⁶ 26. Whatever¹⁴ your illusions may be, time will destroy them. 27. From one end of the earth to the other, men have the same virtues and the same vices.

¹ *le jeu*. ² *de* *p*. ³ is the French equivalent for this word, as here used, an adverb or an adjective? ⁴ why does *tout* agree here, though an

adverb? ⁵ past definite. ⁶ 'all the.' ⁷ past indefinite. ⁸ precedes 'lost.' ⁹ place after the verb. ¹⁰ place after the noun, and see note 3. ¹¹ plural. ¹² *on*. ¹³ 'one will not listen to them.' ¹⁴ see examples in the rules under *quel que*. ¹⁵ *il faut*. ¹⁶ pluperfect; with what does the participle agree?

15. VERBS CONJUGATED WITH 'ÊTRE.'

The following verbs are always conjugated with *être*. This auxiliary should not convey to the American pupil the meaning of *to be*, but of *to have*: thus, *il est tombé* does not mean *he is fallen*, but *he has fallen*. Most of the following are verbs of motion, and they usually indicate not only the action, but a change of position or condition of the subject as the result of the action.

aller = to go.

partir = to go away, to leave, to start.

sortir = to go out, to come out.

arriver = to arrive.

entrer = to enter, come in.

rentrer = get in, come home, get home.

venir = to come.

revenir = to return, to come back.

devenir = to become.

intervenir = to intervene.

parvenir = to attain, reach, succeed in.

provenir = to come from, to issue.

rester = to remain, stay.

tomber = to fall.

naître (active in French) = to be born.

éclore = to hatch, to open, to dawn.

mourir = to die.

décéder = to die, to de cease, to expire.

advenir = to occur, happen.

Note.—The exercise given below offers numerous examples of the use in French of the past indefinite where the simple past tense is required in English. This difference between the two languages should be carefully noted by the learner. He should also apply the rule for the agreement of the participle with the subject of the verb when the auxiliary is *être*. See page 79.

Exercise 29.

1. We went¹ to see your sister yesterday.
2. We found¹ no one at home; everybody had gone² to³ the country.
3. My master went out¹ early this morning, and he has not

yet returned.⁴ 4. Did you go out¹ yesterday morning? No, I stayed¹ at home all the morning, on account of the bad weather. 5. I arrived¹ too late to³ catch the ten o'clock train.⁵ 6. I should have arrived in⁶ time if I had started² two minutes sooner. 7. The joke went¹ too far. 8. How long⁷ did he stay in⁶ Paris? 9. Did you return for your sister's wedding?⁸ 10. This insect was⁹ born and died¹ the same day. 11. My sister fell¹ in⁶ the middle of the street. ✓ 12. The Jews had left¹⁰ Egypt under the guidance of Moses. 13. Reading has become a cheap¹¹ pleasure. 14. Your brother went out¹ to⁸ buy a newspaper. 15. He got into¹² the carriage with his father, and I have not seen¹³ him since. 16. The works of this author perished¹⁴ with¹⁵ him. 17. I should have died rather than¹⁶ consent to that proposition. 18. People¹⁷ have succeeded in⁶ taming these wild¹¹ beasts. 19. About twelve o'clock,¹⁸ I came down¹ to the dining-room to eat¹⁹ my lunch. 20. I have not seen your friend lately. What has become of him?²⁰ 21. We entered¹ the boat and²¹ started.¹ 22. A new project has dawned²² in his imagination. 23. We came home¹ very late. 24. All sciences, all arts were⁹ born²³ among free¹¹ nations.

¹ past indefinite. ² pluperfect of *partir*. ³ *pour*. ⁴ *rentré*. ⁵ 'train of ten hours.' ⁶ *à*. ⁷ *combien de temps*. ⁸ *les noces de*. ⁹ present. ¹⁰ pluperfect of *sortir de*. ¹¹ place after the noun. ¹² *monter en*; omit 'the.' ¹³ *revoir*. ¹⁴ *mourir*. ¹⁵ *comme*. ¹⁶ *plutôt que de*. ¹⁷ *on*. ¹⁸ *vers midi*. ¹⁹ *prendre*. ²⁰ 'what has he become?' ²¹ repeat subject. ²² *éclos*. ²³ masculine plural.

16. REFLEXIVE VERBS.

Simple and Compound Tenses.

The following are among the most frequently found of reflexive verbs; the meanings of some differ when the verb is not reflexive: as, *douter* = *to doubt*; *se douter* = *to suspect*.

The compound tenses of reflexive verbs always take *être*, and the past participle agrees with the pronoun objects *me, te, se, nous, vous, se*.

tromper = to deceive.
se tromper = to be mistaken.
appeler = to call.
s'appeler = to be named.
servir = to serve.
se servir de = to use.
lever = to raise.
se lever = to rise.
plaire = to please.
se plaire à = to delight in, to like.
s'amuser = to enjoy one's self.
s'arrêter = to stop.
se fier à = to trust.
se coucher = to go to bed.
s'habiller = to dress.
s'endormir = to go to sleep.
se taire = to be silent, to keep silence.
s'efforcer = to endeavor.
s'ennuyer = to be bored, lonesome; to find time tedious.

trouver = to find.
se trouver = to be.
apercevoir = to see.
s'apercevoir = to notice, become aware of.
passer = to pass.
se passer de = to do without.
aller = to go.
s'en aller = to go away.
rire = to laugh.
se rire de = to make fun of.
se rappeler = to recall.
se souvenir de = to remember.
s'emparer de = to seize, to take possession.
s'empresser = to be eager to.
s'approcher de = to come up, go up to.
s'éloigner de = come away from, go away from.

Exercise 30.

1. We abstained¹ from any² remarks. 2. Were you lonesome³ while I was⁴ absent? 3. I have always rejoiced over your success. 4. Why did you not come? We should have been delighted⁵ to see you. 5. If I had⁶ youth and health, I should not mind⁷ poverty. 6. One often⁸ repents having⁹ spoken. 7. Why did you go away³ from the window? 8. Do you remember these young ladies? 9. You forgot¹ to water your flowers, and they have faded.¹ 10. The French took possession¹ of Holland in the dead of²⁰ winter. 11. The love of the native⁸ soil never⁸ dies¹¹ in the heart of man. 12. Fish are caught¹² with hooks, and men are caught with presents.

- (13. If any one had entered the apartment, I should have waked up. 14. The wicked fear,¹³ hate, avoid one another. 15. My father will be angry if you stop to¹⁴ talk with me. 16. You are sleepy because you went to bed¹ late last night. 17. The things of which we complain¹⁵ most bitterly are sometimes very insignificant. 18. Use my dictionary. 19. He remembers that you made fun¹ of him. 20. Make haste to rise and¹⁶ dress yourself. 21. My mother likes to cultivate her flowers. 22. You behaved¹ very well¹⁷ in that affair. 23. I noticed¹⁸ that you had gone to sleep.¹⁹ 24. Don't worry too much about the future.

¹ past indefinite. ² *toutes*. ³ in the interrogative of compound tenses of reflexive verbs, the object pronoun precedes, and the subject pronoun follows the auxiliary. ⁴ imperfect. ⁵ past conditional of *se bien réjouir de*. ⁶ change to *avec*. ⁷ present conditional of *se soucier peu de*. ⁸ place after word modified. ⁹ infinitive present. ¹⁰ *dans le fort de*. ¹¹ *s' éteindre*. ¹² *se prendre*. ¹³ place *se* before each of these verbs and omit 'one another.' ¹⁴ *à*. ¹⁵ insert *le*. ¹⁶ repeat preposition. ¹⁷ place between auxiliary and participle. ¹⁸ past definite. ¹⁹ pluperfect.

17. ACTIVE VOICE WITH 'ON' FOR THE SUBJECT.

Note.—In the following exercise, the subjects of all the principal verbs,—such words as *people, we, one, they, mortals, men*, etc.,—must be rendered into French by the indefinite pronoun *on*, and the verbs and all attributes of the subject must agree with it in the singular.

Exercise 31.

1. People envy the fate of a rich¹ and beautiful young girl.
2. We praise noble² deeds, but we do not imitate them. 3. One is never ugly when one has a beautiful soul. 4. Mortals wear away life in³ pursuing⁴ happiness, and⁵ die without having⁴ attained it. 5. People often⁶ lose their⁷ reputation for having⁴ ill chosen their⁸ friends. 6. We cease to be unhappy when we begin to hope. 7. Much rest is often lost⁹ for a little gold. 8. People rarely⁶ succeed when they⁵ undertake a great many

things at once. 9. Men are moulded⁹ by education. 10. When we have not what we¹⁰ like, we must¹¹ like what we¹⁰ have. 11. The beloved⁶ voice of a friend is easily⁶ recognized.⁹ 12. When we are hungry, the coarsest⁶ food seems delicious. 13. Men run to¹² avenge a light⁶ offence and they¹⁰ often⁶ forgive a very serious⁶ wrong. 14. We do not hate all those whom we¹⁰ despise. 15. Joseph's cup was found¹³ in Benjamin's bag. 16. When we oblige a¹² friend¹² promptly, we oblige him¹² twofold. 17. The canary is more easily⁶ raised⁹ than the nightingale. 18. The¹² more one talks, the¹² less one thinks. 19. It was formerly believed⁹ that the appearance of a comet foreboded¹⁴ great events. 20. One succeeds in many things with a little patience. 21. It was formerly believed⁹ that the earth was¹⁴ flat.

¹ place 'rich' and 'beautiful' after the noun. ² *les belles*. ³ *à*. ⁴ remember that, with the exception of *en*, all prepositions govern the infinitive. ⁵ repeat *on*. ⁶ place after the word modified. ⁷ *sa*. ⁸ *ses*. ⁹ change to active form, thus: *on perd souvent bien du*, etc. ¹⁰ *l'on*. ¹¹ *il faut*. ¹² omit this word. ¹³ past definite; see note 9. ¹⁴ put both verbs in the imperfect.

18. FOUR IMPORTANT MODAL VERBS: 'DEVOIR,' 'FALLOIR,' 'POUVOIR,' 'VOULOIR.'

a. Devoir: to owe; must, to have to; to be to; ought, etc.

Note.— This verb, of constant use in French, offers much difficulty to the learner. Not defective in a single part, its different tenses correspond to a number of defective English auxiliaries: **must** (*must have had to, shall have to, should have to*), **to be to** (*am to, was to*), **ought** (*ought to have*), etc. When **must** and **ought** refer to some past action, their forms remain unchanged, but the infinitive following them changes from a present to a past; this is because the English modal verbs have no form for the past participle. In French, the infinitive remains unchanged, while the auxiliary verb is put in a compound tense, exactly like any other verb. **Ex.:** *I ought to say,*

I ought to have said = *je devrais dire, j'aurais dû dire*. This difference in the construction is also observable in *pouvoir* and *falloir*.

The following conjugation of *devoir*, — as well as that of *falloir*, *pouvoir*, *vouloir*, given further, — is intended to assist the student in understanding the literal and idiomatic meanings of the most important tenses of these verbs; the less common tenses and more infrequent constructions have been purposely omitted, so as not to confuse the mind of the learner at this stage of his work. He should memorize perfectly the meanings of the moods and tenses given, and constantly refer to them while translating the English forms into French.

SIMPLE TENSES.

Indicative Present:	Je dois = I owe. Je dois aller = I am to go, I must go, I have to go, I am obliged to go, it is necessary for me to go.
Indicative Imperfect:	Je devais = I owed, I was owing. Je devais aller = I was to go, I had to go, I was obliged to go, it was necessary for me to go.
Past Definite:	Je dus = I owed. Je dus aller = I had to go, I was obliged to go, it was necessary for me to go.
Future:	Je devrai = I shall owe. Je devrai aller = I shall have to go, I shall be obliged to go, it will be necessary for me to go.
Conditional Present:	Je devrais = I should owe. Je devrais aller = I ought to go, I should go, I should have to go, I should be obliged to go, it would be necessary for me to go.
Subjunctive Present:	Que je doive = that I may or shall owe. Que je doive aller = that I may have to go, that I must go, that I may be obliged to go, that it may or shall be necessary for me to go.
Subjunctive Imperfect:	Que je dusse = that I might or should owe. Que je dusse aller = that I might have to go, that I should be obliged to go, that I should have to go, that it might or would be necessary for me to go.

COMPOUND TENSES.

Past Indefinite:	{	J'ai dû = I have owed. J'ai dû aller = I have had to go, I have been obliged to go, it has been necessary for me to go, I must have gone.
Indicative Pluperfect:	{	J'avais dû = I had owed. J'avais dû aller = I had had to go, I had been obliged to go, it had been necessary for me to go.
Future Anterior:	{	J'aurai dû = I shall have owed. J'aurai dû aller = I shall have had to go, I shall have been obliged to go, it will have been necessary for me to go, I must have gone. (The future anterior of ordinary verbs sometimes has this idiomatic meaning. Ex. : elle aura rencontré sa mère, she must have met her mother.)
Conditional Past:	{	J'aurais dû = I should have owed. J'aurais dû aller = I ought to have gone, I should have gone, I should have had to go, I should have been obliged to go, it would have been necessary for me to go.

✓ Exercise 32.

Note. — In the following exercise, where *must* or its equivalents occur, *devoir* and not *falloir* must be used. Remember that when *devoir* is used as an auxiliary, it never takes any preposition before the following infinitive.

1. She is looking at you curiously ; she must be surprised to see you here. 2. You must¹ have been² very glad to see your friend again after such a long³ separation. 3. Your mother is to meet you at our house at three o'clock. 4. The poor little creature must be frozen. 5. I ought⁴ not to speak of myself. 6. The best of⁵ things must be taken⁶ in⁷ small quantities.⁸ 7. She ought⁹ to have shown² more tenderness. 8. Every mortal must act. 9. These were¹⁰ reasons which I could¹² not but⁵ understand. 10. He must¹ have left³ you a great

deal of money. 11. Tell him that he ought⁴ to be ashamed of⁵ himself.⁵ 12. I related¹² to him how I had had to¹³ part from my only friend. 13. You must¹ have walked² a long time; how hungry you must all be!¹⁴ 14. You must have been told¹⁵ that I was¹⁶ a⁵ great friend of your father. 15. I am going to see the judge who is to question you to-morrow. 16. Young men must ask counsel of¹⁷ old men. 17. The feast was to¹¹ last all night. 18. You must have received¹⁸ a very bad impression of me. 19. My sister should⁹ not have come;² she ought to have stayed quietly at home. 20. We must make moderate use¹⁹ of the advantages that fortune procures us. 21. He who is loved by all should⁴ live forever. 22. I do not know if he is to marry her. 23. The countess was¹⁶ the woman who owed¹⁶ her the most. 24. He must have had²⁰ time to hide them. 25. He must have gone²⁰ to see them yesterday. 26. He did not²¹ have¹⁶ his watch; he must¹⁸ have sold it to buy different objects for himself²² and²³ me. 27. My son-in-law is a man; he ought⁴ to protect me. 28. You, too,²⁴ must be very much⁵ changed. 29. It was there that we were to¹⁶ spend the night. 30. You ought not to remain thus six weeks without writing to your mother. 31. He knew¹⁶ that this²⁵ was to¹⁶ cure him. 32. We must take some²⁶ precautions against the cold. 33. He must have hidden²⁰ himself somewhere while we were¹⁶ out of doors. 34. You should⁴ not allow that child to behave thus. 35. In a few days, you will know what you will have to²⁷ do.

¹ past indefinite. ² put in the present infinitive. ³ *une si longue*. ⁴ observe that the special function of the present conditional of *devoir* is to translate 'ought' or 'should' as used here. ⁵ omit this word. ⁶ past participle must agree in the feminine plural. ⁷ *en*, not *dans*, is generally used when the following noun is not preceded by an article or limiting adjective. ⁸ singular. ⁹ past conditional. ¹⁰ *c'étaient-là des*. ¹¹ translate by the imperfect of *devoir* in the affirmative. ¹² past definite. ¹³ plural perfect of *devoir*. ¹⁴ turn: 'how (*comme*) you must have all hunger!' ¹⁵ change this passive to the active voice, and see notes 1 and 2. ¹⁶ imper-

fect. ¹⁷ à. ¹⁸ *emporter*. ¹⁹ *user avec modération*. ²⁰ replace *devoir* by future anterior of this verb. ²¹ *plus*. ²² *lui*. ²³ repeat preposition. ²⁴ repeat the subject. ²⁵ *cela*. ²⁶ *nos*. ²⁷ future.

b. Falloir : *must*, to have to, to be obliged to, to be necessary.

Indicative Present :	{ Il faut que vous veniez = you must come, it is necessary that you should come.
Future :	{ Il faudra que vous veniez = you must come, you will have to come, you will be obliged to come, it will be necessary for you to come.
Indicative Imperfect :	{ Il fallait que vous vinssiez = you should have come, you had to come, you were obliged to come, it was necessary that you should come.
Past Definite :	{ Il fallut que vous vinssiez (= same meanings as those of the imperfect, but referring to some definite moment in the past).
Conditional Present :	{ Il faudrait que vous vinssiez = you should have to come, you would be obliged to come, it would be necessary for you to come, you ought to come.
Subjunctive Present :	{ Croyez-vous qu'il faille venir ? = do you think that I must come? that I should come? that it is necessary for me to come?
Subjunctive Imperfect :	{ Croyiez-vous qu'il fallût venir ? = did you think that I should come? that I had to come? that I was obliged to come? that it was necessary for me to come?
Past Indefinite :	{ Il a fallu que vous vinssiez = you have had to come, you have been obliged to come, it has been necessary for you to come.
Pluperfect :	{ Il avait fallu que vous vinssiez = you had had to come, you had been obliged to come, it had been necessary for you to come.
Conditional Past :	{ Il aurait fallu que vous vinssiez = you would have had to come, you would have been obliged to come, it would have been necessary for you to come, you ought to have come.

Falloir as the equivalent of the impersonal verb *it takes* :—

Il lui faut une heure pour venir ici = it takes her an hour to come here.

Il lui fallait, etc. = it used to take her an hour, etc.

Il lui fallut, etc. = it took her (on one particular occasion) an hour to come here.

Il lui faudra, etc. = it will take her, etc.

Il lui faudrait, etc. = it would take her, etc.

Croyez-vous qu'il lui faille, etc. = do you think it will take, etc.

Croyiez-vous qu'il lui fallût, etc. = did you think it would take, etc.

Il lui a fallu, etc. = it has taken her, etc.

Il lui avait fallu, etc. = it had taken her, etc.

Il lui aura fallu, etc. = it will have taken, etc.

Il lui aurait fallu, etc. = it would have taken, etc.

Other meanings of **falloir** are : *to want, to need, to lack*.

Ex. : **avez-vous tout ce qu'il vous faut**? **Il me faut** une chandelle et du savon = *have you all that you need? I need a candle and some soap*; **il lui faut** encore dix francs = *he still lacks ten francs*.

Note.—The following remarks are to be carefully studied by the pupil : they are intended to emphasize some of the differences which exist between the nature and uses of **falloir** and *must*.

1. **Falloir** is an impersonal verb ; *must* is not.
2. **Falloir** is defective in the present participle only ; *must* is defective in all parts but one ; and, as in the case of **devoir**, replaces the parts wanting by *to have to, to be obliged to*, etc.
3. *It is necessary* naturally suggests itself to the mind of the beginner as the proper translation for **il faut**, because both forms are impersonal and therefore seem to correspond, but they do not always in sense. On the contrary, the impersonal verb *to be necessary* would, in many cases, mistranslate **falloir**, which has not only all the imperative force of *must*, but all the forms of mood and

tense which are lacking in *must*; thus, *il ne faut pas que vous trahissiez sa confiance* does not mean *it is not necessary that you should betray his confidence*, but *you must not betray his confidence*.

4. **Falloir**, as a verb of necessity, is followed either by an *infinitive past* or *present*, or by a *subjunctive clause*. The latter construction is considered to give more clearness, more definiteness, to the statement. The infinitive conveys the idea of necessity in a more general, more vague and less personal sense. Ex.: *il faut payer ses dettes* = *one must pay one's debts*; *il faut pardonner à ses amis* = *we should forgive our friends*; *il faut s'accoutumer aux petites misères de la vie* = *we must get used to the small worries of life*. However, the infinitive often follows when the idea of personal necessity is implied by some sentence preceding **falloir**. Ex.: *vous arrivez toujours un peu en retard*; *il faut partir plus tôt* = *you always arrive a little late*; *you must start earlier*.

Exercise 33.

Note.—In the following exercise, where *must* or its equivalents occur, **falloir** and not **devoir** must be used. While in some cases synonyms, **falloir** corresponds more closely to the English verb in expressing imperative necessity. It will also translate properly the passive voice. Ex.: *he must be spoken to*; *il faut qu'on lui parle*. When **falloir** is in a past or conditional tense, it is followed by the infinitive rather than the subjunctive.

1. The child must¹ obey.
2. You must go and² see your aunt to-morrow.
3. I have exactly what I need.³
4. We⁴ must think deeply⁵ before we act.⁶
5. It was necessary⁷ that you should keep me informed⁸ of this affair.
6. You must endure what you cannot prevent.
7. We shall have to get up⁹ very early to take that train.
8. We⁴ must render to each one what is due to him.
9. We shall have to get under shelter¹⁰ in the first house we meet.¹¹
10. The law must¹ be

severe and men indulgent. 11. We⁴ must not judge a man¹⁸ by what he says, but by what he does. 12. He has to be amused¹³ like a child. 13. My father must not suspect that we have talked together. 14. It did not take¹⁴ me long to understand the cause of all these cries. 15. You spoke¹⁵ to me, but I did not hear you; you must speak louder. 16. You must accept my proposition now or never. 17. I should give up my rights if I had to⁷ claim them before the courts. 18. One⁴ must not occupy houses that² are² badly built and unhealthy. 19. He is in a perspiration; ¹⁶ he must have run.¹⁷ 20. We must¹³ keep some provisions for our dinner. 21. One of us will have to sit up¹⁸ to keep up the fire. 22. This affair must¹ be promptly concluded. 23. I did not believe⁷ that it would be necessary¹⁹ to take this journey. 24. It was necessary¹⁴ that Heaven should raise²⁰ Joan of Arc to deliver France from the English. 25. Here is one card of invitation; you don't need two.²¹ 26. It must be confessed¹³ that I, too, was terribly hungry.²² 27. One⁴ must know how² to be rich. 28. Will it take you very² long to run to my sister's? 29. Do you think it is necessary²³ to pay that money now? 30. If I had not had to²⁴ take care of²⁵ the house, I should have gone to your house. 31. It is²⁶ ten o'clock; I must¹ leave you. 32. Your master owes me too much money already;²⁷ you must go away from here.

¹ 'it is necessary that.' ² omit this word. ³ 'what to me is necessary.' ⁴ such subjects as 'we,' 'one,' etc., found before *must* in sentences where the idea expressed is general or impersonal, must be rendered into French by *il*. ⁵ *réfléchir mûrement*. ⁶ infinitive present. ⁷ imperfect. ⁸ *me tenir au courant*. ⁹ in this construction, the verb may be translated either by the subjunctive present of the corresponding French verb, or by the infinitive, as in English, preceded by a personal pronoun object of the same person as the subject of the first verb. ¹⁰ *se mettre à l'abri*; see note 9. ¹¹ future. ¹² *juger de quelqu'un*. ¹³ 'it is necessary to' . . . ¹⁴ use past definite of *falloir*. ¹⁵ past indefinite. ¹⁶ *en nage*. ¹⁷ translate 'have run' by the third person singular of the past subjunctive of

sourir. ¹⁸ turn: 'it will be necessary that one of us sit up' (present subjunctive). ¹⁹ imperfect subjunctive. ²⁰ *suscitât.* ²¹ add 'of them' and place before the verb. ²² 'had a hunger terrible.' ²³ present subjunctive of *falloir.* ²⁴ pluperfect indicative of *falloir*, preceded by *m'*; omit the second negative. ²⁵ *garder.* ²⁶ *voici.* ²⁷ place immediately after *devoir.*

c. Pouvoir: can, could; may, might; to be able.

Indicative Present:	{ Je peux <i>or</i> puis aller = I can go, I may go.
Indicative Imperfect:	{ Je pouvais aller = I could go, I was able to go.
Past Definite:	{ Je pus aller = I could go, I was able to go (on some particular occasion).
Future:	{ Je pourrai aller = I can go, I shall go, I shall be able to go.
Conditional Present:	{ Je pourrais aller = I could go, I might go, I should be able to go.
Subjunctive Present:	{ Que je puisse aller = that I can <i>or</i> may go, that I shall go, that I may be able to go.
Subjunctive Imperfect:	{ Que je pusse aller = that I could <i>or</i> might go, that I should be able to go.
Past Indefinite:	{ J'ai pu aller = I could go, I can have gone, I have been able to go, I was able to go.
Indicative Pluperfect:	{ J'avais pu aller = I could have gone, I had been able to go.
Future Anterior:	{ J'aurai pu aller = I shall have been able to go, it will have been possible for me to go.
Conditional Past:	{ J'aurais pu aller = I could have gone, I might have gone, I should <i>or</i> might have been able to go.
Subjunctive Past:	{ Que j'aie pu aller = that I may have <i>or</i> shall have gone, that I can have gone, that I may have been able to go.
Subjunctive Pluperfect:	{ Que j'eusse pu aller = that I might <i>or</i> should have gone, that I might <i>or</i> should have been able to go.

Infinitive Past : **Avoir pu aller** = to have been able to go.
 Compound of
 Present Participle : { **Ayant pu aller** = having been able to go.

Note the following remarks : —

1. The second negative is frequently omitted after **pouvoir**, and no preposition ever follows directly.
2. Notice that the compound tenses of **pouvoir** are followed by an infinitive present which must be translated by the past of the infinitive verb in English. This is because the ordinary English equivalents of **pouvoir** — can, could, may, might — have no participle forms. Ex. : **j'aurais pu aller chez lui** = *I could have gone to his house.*
3. The use of **pouvais** and **pourrais** should not be confused. **Pouvais** is past, and translates *could* in the sense of *was able*; **pourrais** is conditional or potential, and translates *could* in the sense of *would be able, might, might be able.*
4. The future, and not the present, must be used to translate *can*, when the verb refers to a future and not a present action. Ex. : **je ne sais pas si je pourrai venir demain** = *I do not know if I can come to-morrow.*
5. **Pouvoir** is also used in such reflexive and impersonal forms as **il se peut**, in the sense of *it may be, it is possible.* When so used, it is always followed by the subjunctive.
6. The subjunctive present of **pouvoir** used independently translates *may*, to express *desire, wish, congratulations.* Ex. : **puissiez-vous être heureux !** = *may you be happy !*
7. When 'I cannot,' 'I could not,' mean *I do not know how*, these forms are sometimes translated by the conditional of **savoir** instead of **pouvoir**. In this use of the verb, **pas** is omitted. Ex. : **je ne saurais vous dire où elle demeure** = *I could not tell you where she lives*; **l'homme le plus heureux ne saurait se passer d'un ami** = *the happiest of men cannot do without a friend.*

Exercise 34.

1. Could¹ you tell me what plant is the most useful² to man?
2. When I can³ follow you, I shall.⁴
3. I did not do the way⁵ you told⁶ me to do, because I couldn't.⁷
4. May I talk⁸ with you for half an hour?
5. You might⁹ have broken¹⁰ your leg.
6. Not knowing Latin, you might¹¹ forget this word.
7. You told⁷ my sister that you could¹ not come to dine at our house.
8. I have never been able to speak of it to any one.
9. I might¹¹ perhaps give you a good counsel.
10. My brother could¹ not believe that he had spoken¹² so indiscreetly.
11. That is unfortunate, but we¹³ can't help it.¹⁴
12. Never can³ I¹⁵ leave the country where I was born.
13. You would like¹⁶ to remain here, but that cannot¹⁷ be.
14. Agriculture is the noblest occupation¹⁸ which a man can¹⁹ follow.²⁰
15. I cannot accept your conditions. | 16. How can⁷ you have passed²¹ ten long²² days without seeing her?
17. She used to scold²³ me gravely as a mother²⁴ might have⁹ done.²⁵
18. One moment²⁶ may destroy a century of happiness.
19. You will do all you can³ to go to sleep?
20. The lover might¹¹ suspect that he has a rival.
21. He has done all that he could⁷ to render me that service.
22. I have spent many²⁷ hours in²⁸ asking myself how I could⁶ have said such a thing.²⁹
23. You are right; I could not³⁰ live without you.
24. You think you can³¹ depend on that young man?
25. Heaven grant³² you long and happy days!
26. I am afraid that you cannot¹⁹ succeed.
27. No one can read these touching words without weeping.
28. I do not know what³³ others might have⁹ thought of me; but to be sincere, I must declare that I thought²⁸ myself superb.
29. Although my friend was³⁴ guilty, I could²⁸ not think³⁵ of abandoning him.
30. Since I had left Paris, I had not been able to earn a cent.
31. A grand inquisitor might have¹² envied that smile.
32. I thought³⁶ that in the midst of these blocks of granite, we might¹¹ find a shelter against the coolness of the night.
33. Where can⁷ he have hidden them?

34. I do not know if I can³ come to-morrow. Why could you not come to-morrow? Because I have a thousand things to²⁸ do. 35. I could⁹ not have finished this work, if you had not helped⁶ me. 36. May I be useful to you in³⁷ anything? 37. I have only you to whom I can¹⁹ complain. 38. Who could weary of admiring nature? 39. If I thought²⁸ that your project could³⁴ succeed, I would not refuse to take part in it.³⁸

¹ see remark (3). ² turn: 'what is the plant the most useful.' ³ see remark (4). ⁴ repeat 'follow.' ⁵ *comme*. ⁶ put the French verb in the pluperfect indicative. ⁷ past indefinite. ⁸ *s'entretenir avec*. ⁹ past conditional of *pouvoir*. ¹⁰ put this verb in the reflexive form and translate the following possessive adjective by *une*. ¹¹ present conditional of *pouvoir*. ¹² put the French verb in the pluperfect subjunctive. ¹³ insert *y*. ¹⁴ 'help it' must be rendered by *rien*. ¹⁵ must precede 'can.' ¹⁶ present conditional of *vouloir*. ¹⁷ use the reflexive form. ¹⁸ *métier*, m. ¹⁹ present subjunctive. ²⁰ *exercer*. ²¹ *rester*. ²² *grands*. ²³ imperfect indicative. ²⁴ place after the predicate. ²⁵ put this verb in the present infinitive. ²⁶ *instant*, m. ²⁷ *bien des*. ²⁸ *à*. ²⁹ *parole*, f. ³⁰ see remark (7). ³¹ render 'you can' by infinitive present. ³² turn: 'give you some,' and see remark (6). ³³ insert *d'*. ³⁴ imperfect subjunctive. ³⁵ 'have the idea to' (*de*). ³⁶ past definite. ³⁷ *en*. ³⁸ *de m'y associer*.

d. Vouloir : to want, to wish, to will ; **Vouloir bien**, to be willing to, to agree to, to consent, to acquiesce.

Indicative	{	Je veux = I wish, I want, I will.
Present :	{	Je veux bien = I am willing, I consent, etc.
	{	Je ne veux pas = I will not, I don't want to, I won't.
Indicative	{	Je voulais = I wished, I wanted, I would.
Imperfect :	{	Je ne voulais pas = I did not want to, I wouldn't.
	{	Je voulus = I wished, I wanted, I would (on a particular occasion).
Past	{	
Definite :	{	Je ne voulus pas = I did not wish or want to, I wouldn't.
	{	
Future :	{	Je voudrai = I shall wish, I shall want, I will, etc.
	{	Je ne voudrai pas = I shall not want to.

Conditional :	{	Je voudrais = I should like, I should wish to <i>or</i> want to, I would.
		Je voudrais bien = I should very much like to.
		Je ne voudrais pas = I shouldn't like to, I wouldn't.
Subjunctive Present :	{	Que je veuille = that I may <i>or</i> that I shall wish to <i>or</i> want to.
Subjunctive Imperfect :	{	Que je voulusse = that I might <i>or</i> that I should wish to <i>or</i> want to.
Past Indefinite :	{	J'ai voulu = I wanted, I wished, I would, I have wished, I have wanted, I have been willing.
		J'ai bien voulu = I have agreed, consented, acquiesced.
		Je n'ai pas voulu = I didn't wish to <i>or</i> want to, I wouldn't.
Indicative Pluperfect :	{	J'avais voulu = I had wished <i>or</i> wanted.
		Je n'avais pas voulu = I hadn't wanted to <i>or</i> wished to.
Conditional Past :	{	J'aurais voulu = I should have liked, I should have wished, etc.
		J'aurais bien voulu = I should have liked ever so much to, etc.
		Je n'aurais pas voulu = I shouldn't have wished to <i>or</i> wanted to, I wouldn't have.
Subjunctive Past :	{	Que j'aie voulu = that I may <i>or</i> shall have wished <i>or</i> wanted.
Subjunctive Pluperfect :	{	Que j'eusse voulu = that I might <i>or</i> should have wished <i>or</i> wanted.

Note the following remarks :—

1. *Will* is used in English either to form a future tense : *she will return soon* = elle reviendra bientôt ; or, to express wish, desire, willingness, consent, acquiescence : *will you go to the garden with me ?* = voulez-vous aller au jardin avec moi ? Notice that the verb *vouloir* translates only the latter of these two meanings.

2. Je **veux** translates *I wish, I want*, in the sense of 'it is my will.' Ex.: *I want you to go out every day* = je veux que vous sortiez tous les jours. Je **voudrais** translates *I wish, I want*, in the sense of 'I should like,' 'it is my desire.' Ex.: *I wish, I want, I would like to speak to my mother* = je **voudrais** parler à ma mère.
3. When the desire or wish expressed refers to one's self, the following verb is put in the infinitive as in English. Ex.: *I want to start immediately* = je **veux partir** tout de suite. But when that desire or will refers to some one else, the following verb cannot, as in English, be put in the infinitive, but must be put in a subjunctive tense. Ex.: *I want you to leave immediately* = je veux que vous **partiez** tout de suite.
4. **Veillez** — an imperative and subjunctive form of **vouloir** — is frequently used for 'please,' 'be kind enough to,' etc. Ex.: *please wait for me here* = **veillez** m'attendre ici.
5. After **devoir, falloir, pouvoir, vouloir**, the infinitive which completes the sense of these verbs is often omitted in French as in English. Ex.: *You have not given this matter all the attention that you should* = vous n'avez pas donné à cette affaire toute l'attention que vous **auriez dû**; *he was trying to talk, but he couldn't* = il s'efforçait de parler, mais il ne le **pouvait**; *you don't want to obey, but you must* = vous ne voulez pas obéir, mais il le **faut**; *I begged him to stay, but he wouldn't* = je l'ai prié de rester, mais il n'a pas **voulu**.

Exercise 35.

1. Will you stay with me while your mother is¹ in² the country? 2. I should have liked to wait for you; but I was³ afraid of missing my train. 3. She hesitated;³ she did not want³ to let him go.⁴ 4. He could⁵ have written, if he had wished⁶ to.⁷ 5. Please tell my cousin that I am waiting for

her. 6. Would you like to speak to my father? 7. You could have gone⁴ with them. Yes, but I did not want⁸ to.⁷ 8. He could⁹ serve me in this matter, if he wished.⁸ 9. I regret that you do not wish¹⁰ to follow my advice.¹¹ 10. If you wish to succeed, you must work. 11. I should have written to you, if you had wished it. 12. Will you accept my father's proposition? 13. I should like⁹ to be able to relieve all the suffering¹² that I see. 14. I will do everything that you want¹ us to do.¹³ 15. If you like,¹⁴ I will go and⁷ get him. 16. We should like to speak to your daughter in private.¹⁵ 17. Does she want to go with us or stay with them? 18. It is not possible that your mother wishes¹⁰ to leave us so soon. 19. What do you want me to do¹³ with¹⁶ such a sum? 20. Be good enough to carry¹⁷ this letter to its address. 21. I wanted⁸ to take¹⁸ you to the park. 22. You do not know whether¹⁹ she will want to stay here after your departure. 23. The lazy boy⁷ would like to eat the nut, but he does not want to break the shell. 24. I wished²⁰ to explain my reasons to him, but he would²⁰ not listen to me. 25. I should like⁵ to have slept, but I was too thoroughly excited²¹ to²² find calm and sleep. 26. The master wants me to know¹⁸ my lessons well.¹⁵ 27. I am willing to forgive him. 28. We should like to accept your kind²³ invitation. 29. May God help you!²⁴ 30. I would like⁵ to have said good-by to my father.

¹ future. ² à. ³ imperfect. ⁴ *partir*. ⁵ past conditional. ⁶ pluperfect. ⁷ omit this word. ⁸ past indefinite. ⁹ present conditional. ¹⁰ present subjunctive. ¹¹ plural. ¹² *tous les malheureux*. ¹³ for the construction, see remark (3). ¹⁴ present indicative of *vouloir*. ¹⁵ put adverbs or adverbial phrases directly after the verb. ¹⁶ *de*. ¹⁷ *remettre*. ¹⁸ *emmener*; retain the infinitive form of the verb and place the pronoun object before it. ¹⁹ *si*; the future of the verb is never used after *si*, except when it stands for 'whether,' as in this case. ²⁰ past definite of *vouloir*. ²¹ *profondément ému*. ²² *pour*. ²³ *aimable*. ²⁴ construe. 'may (*que*) God wish (*subjunctive present*) to assist you!'

19. USES OF THE PAST INDEFINITE, PAST DEFINITE, AND IMPERFECT.

a. Past Indefinite (Present Perfect).

Did you see my father? Yes, I saw him but I did not speak to him = *avez-vous vu mon père? Oui, je l'ai vu, mais je ne lui ai pas parlé.* Observe that in English the interrogative and negative sentences are formed by the use of the auxiliary verb *did* and the infinitive *see*, while in the affirmative sentence, the verb is put in the simple past tense *saw*. Then, note that all three of these verbs are rendered into French by the **past indefinite** of *voir*. In translating such sentences, the student should be on his guard against falling into the natural error of using the imperfect to which he at first inclines, partly because it is a simple tense, and also because it is the first past tense usually given in the conjugation of French verbs. On the contrary, he should make it a general rule to use the past indefinite, which may be called *the great narrative tense of colloquial or conversational French*, though it is also found in literary style. The time of the action it describes may be definitely specified or not; it may have entirely elapsed or not; but these actions are usually of recent occurrence and may be defined as the separate and detached individual acts and doings of everyday life. This accounts for the constant use made of this tense, which the student must learn to look upon as the proper one to render ideas or describe actions which, in English, would often have to be expressed by the simple past.

It should be added that the past indefinite corresponds exactly to the English present perfect when the latter is used to express the state of vacuity that follows the finishing of an action. Ex.: *I have studied French* = *j'ai étudié le français* (*I am no longer studying it*); *she has been here* = *elle a été ici* (*she is no longer here*).

However, the past indefinite is not the equivalent of the present perfect when the latter refers to a state or action which had its beginning in the past, but still continues in the present. In this case, the French requires the present tense. Ex. : *my sister has been here three years* = *ma sœur est ici depuis trois ans*.

b. Past Definite.

The past definite, sometimes called *preterit* and also the *narrative tense*, is used to speak of actions which were both begun and completed at a definite moment of the past. It differs from the past indefinite in that the time of the action, as well as the action itself, must make no part of the present, must not be conceived of as merging into it, but the action must have reached completion at a definite moment of a past that has entirely elapsed. That is why the past definite is properly used to speak of historical events or facts, while it should not ordinarily be used in conversation and familiar correspondence, which ordinarily deal with facts or events either present or only recently past. As has been said, the past indefinite is the proper one to use in such cases, this latter being primarily a conversational tense, while the past definite is really a literary tense. Both are frequently accompanied by adverbial expressions of time; but, in the case of the past definite, they refer rather to a distant than to a recent past.

c. Imperfect or Descriptive Tense.

The underlying idea of the imperfect is the exact opposite of that of the past definite. It describes not only actions, but scenery, backgrounds, conditions, situations, mental and physical habits, traits of character, emotions, feelings, etc. These may have been begun in a historical as well as a recent past, but they must not be conceived of as having reached completion in the past. On the contrary, the chief idea of the imperfect

is one of either progression, development, or permanence, continuity for the time being in the past. The reason of the great difficulty in understanding the distinction between the use of the past definite and imperfect is the fact that, in English, no past tense exactly corresponds to either of them. The learner is confronted with new shades of expression of the past, and these shades are too varied and too delicate to be compressed within the limits of a general rule. It takes close observation in reading and constant application of a few principal rules to assimilate the foreign idea. This is possible, as there are equivalents in English for some of the uses of the imperfect. The English progressive form renders perfectly the idea of progressive action, condition, or even of certain mental processes, expressed by the French imperfect. Ex.: *we were walking* = *nous marchions*; *she was reclining* = *elle était couchée*; *I was thinking* = *je pensais*; *they were fancying* = *ils s'imaginaient*, etc. For the expression of feelings, emotions, for the description of mental traits, permanent conditions in the past, etc., the progressive form is no longer adequate, and we go back in English to the use of the simple past tense. For the expression of habits, customs, the forms 'used to,' 'would,' render the idea of the imperfect. Ex.: *elle se levait de très bonne heure* = *she used to rise very early*; *elle venait s'asseoir auprès de moi* = *she would come and sit down beside me*. But these equivalents can but faintly represent the characteristics of this tense which, with the past definite, contributes in a great measure to give the French language its clearness and precision.

Note. — As rules on the use of these very important tenses are of general application, it has not been considered necessary to supply special exercises on these subjects, the student having ample opportunity to put them to practical test in all exercises, and especially in the translation of connected English prose.

20. CONDITIONAL CONSTRUCTIONS.

A condition may be expressed : —

1. by the *present* and *future* tenses. Ex. : si vous êtes attentif, vous **comprendrez** = *if you are attentive, you will understand*. The action is still to take place, therefore entirely problematical.
2. by the *imperfect* and *conditional present*. Ex. : si vous étiez attentif, vous **comprendriez** = *if you were attentive, you would understand*. The conditional here refers to a present action and represents it negatively : it is probable that you are not attentive.
3. by the *pluperfect indicative* and *conditional past*. Ex. : si vous aviez été attentif, vous **auriez compris** = *if you had been attentive, you would have understood*. The action here referred to is past and therefore no longer problematical : it is certain that you have not been attentive.

The following remarks should be carefully noted : —

1. Generally speaking, the French conditional corresponds to the English. But it must be observed that the French mood is always one of real condition. Therefore, it cannot be made to translate all the meanings of such conditional and potential forms as *should, could, might*. (See chapter on Modal Verbs.) In such sentences as, *you should tell him what you said*, the verb 'should tell' is not properly translated by the conditional of *dire*, but must be rendered by the conditional of *devoir* which means *ought*.
2. In conditional sentences, 'si,' meaning *if*, must never be followed by a conditional, but always by the indicative present or imperfect, or their compounds. Ex. : si nous venions de plus bonne heure, seriez-vous prêt? = *if we should come earlier, would you be ready?*

3. 'Si,' expressing doubt rather than condition, and meaning *whether*, is followed by a future or conditional. Ex.: je ne sais si je le verrai = *I do not know whether I shall see him*; je ne savais pas si ces livres vous **convendraient** = *I did not know whether these books would suit you*.
4. An emphatic conditional may be expressed by the conditional in both clauses. In such cases, the dependent clause is introduced by 'quand,' 'quand même,' *even if, even though*, never by 'si.' Ex.: quand même vous me haïriez, je ne cesserais de vous aimer = *even if you should hate me, I should not cease to love you*. Sometimes, the independent clause is preceded by 'que.' Ex.: il me haïrait que je ne cesserais de l'aimer = *even though he hated me, I should not cease to love him*.
5. To give force or vivacity to expression, the imperfect indicative is sometimes used instead of the past conditional. Ex.: si j'avais dit un mot, il **se donnait** (*se serait donné*) la mort = *if I had said one word, he would have killed himself*; il **tombait** (*serait tombé*), si je ne l'eusse retenu = *he would have fallen if I had not caught him*.
6. In formal or elegant language, the pluperfect subjunctive is frequently found in one or even both verbs of the conditional sentence. Ex.: si j'**eusse** (*avais*) été méchant comme tant d'autres, je **serais** heureux comme eux = *if I had been wicked like so many others, I should have been fortunate like them*; il est vrai, s'il **m'eût** (*avait*) cru, qu'il **n'eût** (*aurait*) point fait de vers = *it is true that, if he had taken my advice, he would not have written verses*.
7. The conditional mood is frequently found in certain sentences where the condition is understood; as, for instance, in expressing a desire: je **voudrais** apprendre l'italien = *I should like to study Italian*; sometimes also in exclamations, to express surprise: comment, vous **feriez** une

chose pareille ! = *is it possible that you would do such a thing!* or, to replace the somewhat harsh imperative by a more polite form of expression : *auriez-vous l'obligeance de remettre cette lettre à monsieur votre père?* = *would you have the kindness to hand this letter to your father?*

Exercise 36.

1. If we lived¹ on² hope, we should run the³ risk of dying of hunger. 2. If the occasion presents itself, you will not neglect⁴ it. 3. If you⁵ sow the wind, you will reap the whirlwind. 4. If Rome had not been⁶ corrupted, the Barbarians would not have conquered her. 5. If any one⁷ accused your absent⁸ friend, you would defend him. 6. I should be very ungrateful if I ever⁸ forgot your kindness.⁹ 7. If you employ my cousin, you may¹⁰ repent it. 8. I should have gone to Rome with you, if you had been willing¹¹ to take me. 9. If we were more temperate, we should live longer. 10. If the lamb should stray¹ from the shepherd, he would become the prey of the famished⁸ wolf. 11. If you do not start now, you will miss the train. 12. If no one had the superfluous,¹² every one would have the necessities of life.¹³ 13. Flatterers would corrupt the best disposition.¹⁴ 14. If we always⁸ listened to the voice of our conscience, we should never⁸ know¹⁵ remorse. 15. If the heat¹⁶ continues, the harvest will not be good.¹⁷ 16. If the earth were¹ harder, the ploughman could not cultivate it. 17. If we ask¹⁸ her to come, will she come? 18. If the sun were¹ suddenly⁸ annihilated, everything that is on the earth would soon⁸ perish. 19. You would be very proud if you should reach¹ that fine position. 20. If I see my son once more, I shall die content. 21. If you confessed¹⁹ your faults, they would be forgiven²⁰ you. 22. Without a⁸ guide, you would certainly have lost yourself in these mountains. 23. The woman said to the serpent, "If we eat of the fruit of this tree, we shall die." 24. If one⁷ abuses them, the best things finish

by becoming insipid. 25. If you were older, you would understand better the importance of work. 26. The man who should feign one thing and²¹ do another would be considered perfidious and wicked. 27. If men employed their time better,⁸ they would not complain of its brevity. 28. If you should pick¹ your pears before they are perfectly ripe,²² you would preserve them longer. 29. We do not know whether²³ my mother will go to Europe next⁸ year. 30. He has invited me, but I do not know if²³ I shall accept his invitation. 31. We thought²⁴ that you would never⁸ come. 32. I admire him now, but I do not know whether I shall continue to admire him when I shall know him better.

¹ see remark (2). ² *de*. ³ omit this word. ⁴ *laisser échapper*. ⁵ use second person singular. ⁶ pluperfect. ⁷ *t'en*. ⁸ place after word modified. ⁹ *vos bontés*. ¹⁰ future of *pouvoir bien*. ¹¹ pluperfect of *bien vouloir*. ¹² use masculine singular of the adjective. ¹³ 'necessities of life' = *le nécessaire*. ¹⁴ *naturel*, m. ¹⁵ *connaître*. ¹⁶ plural. ¹⁷ *abondante*. ¹⁸ *prier* (de). ¹⁹ *convenir de*. ²⁰ put in the active voice. ²¹ insert *en*. ²² *avant leur complète maturité*. ²³ see remark (3). ²⁴ imperfect.

21. THE SUBJUNCTIVE: PRINCIPAL CASES OF ITS USE.

The indicative mood presents a fact or an idea as real, actual, evident, or probable; the subjunctive presents an idea, not as real or evident of itself, but as subordinate to, or depending upon another idea expressed in the independent clause. It should be remembered that the use of the subjunctive never depends upon a *word*, but always upon some *idea* of *doubt*, *uncertainty*, *possibility* in the mind of the speaker with regard to the action in question. If this idea changes to one of certainty, reality, probability, the subjunctive is replaced by the indicative; this liability to change in the governing idea accounts for the numerous exceptions given in grammars under most cases of the use of the subjunctive. These cases are not

treated here. Whenever they occur, the reason will lie in the change from doubt to certainty expressed by the verb of the independent clause.

CASE I.

The Subjunctive depending upon Verbs and Conjunctions.

1. The subjunctive is used after all verbs and expressions of the **will**, and after everything relating to the idea of **will**; as, desire, intention, permission, entreaty, command or order (*dire, écrire, prétendre, entendre que*), consent, prohibition, requirement, etc.

2. After all verbs and expressions of the **feelings**; as, joy, regret, shame, surprise, merit, approval, dissatisfaction, fear, apprehension, anger, delight, preference, etc.

3. *a.* After all **conjunctions** which express **condition**; as, *à condition que, supposé que, au cas que, à moins que, pour peu que, si peu que, si tant est que, soit que . . . soit que.*

b. After **conjunctions** which express **fear or apprehension**; as, *de peur que, de crainte que*, etc.

c. After **conjunctions** expressing **purpose of the will**; as, *afin que, pour que, de façon que, de sorte que*, etc.

d. After **conjunctions** or other words which denote **concession**; as, *quoique, quoi que, bien que, encore que, malgré que, quel que, quelque, si . . . que, tout . . . que, qui que*, etc.

e. After **conjunctions of time**, when referring to actions still in the future and therefore uncertain; as, *avant que, jusqu'à ce que, en attendant que*; also, after *que*, used in the sense of *à moins que, avant que, sans que, de peur que, de crainte que*.

4. After verbs and conjunctions which express an idea of **doubt, negation**; as, *douter, nier, disconvenir, contester*, etc., and *non pas que, non que, ce n'est pas que, sans que, bien loin que, jamais que*, etc.

Note.— See rule for the *Sequence of the Tenses of the Subjunctive with those of the Indicative*, page 78.

Exercise 37.

1. Your friend wants¹ you to go² and see him. 2. I am delighted³ that you have enjoyed⁴ yourself. 3. I prefer that Mary should finish⁵ her work before going out with you. 4. My sister asks that you answer her letter as soon as possible.⁶ 5. Allow me to tell you the truth.⁷ 6. The merchant insists⁸ that this bill shall be settled immediately. 7. You deserve to be punished.⁹ 8. God required¹⁰ that Abraham should sacrifice¹¹ his son Isaac; but he did not allow¹⁰ this sacrifice to be performed.¹² 9. I wish you to talk² less and do¹³ more. 10. My mother has forbidden me to come² and see you. 11. I will prevent¹⁴ his plan from succeeding.¹⁵ 12. If you receive¹⁶ these people in your house, I fear¹⁴ you will regret¹⁷ it. 13. I intend¹⁸ that you shall obey my orders. 14. Tell Mary to wait¹⁹ for me at my aunt's. 15. Do you want me to describe² to you the house that I live in? 16. I wish²⁰ that you may have a pleasant²¹ journey. 17. I wish²² that he would talk¹¹ a long time. 18. We are very happy that you should have succeeded.⁴ 19. Caligula used to wish²⁰ that the Roman people had¹¹ only one²³ head. 20. Your friend is delighted²⁴ that you should not have forgotten⁴ him. 21. I am glad that I am made to²⁵ study. 22. I am sorry²⁶ that you did not wait⁴ two minutes. 23. I am surprised that he should have said⁴ that. 24. I am afraid¹⁴ this child is not truthful.²⁷ 25. I am sorry²⁸ that you should waste so much time in doing nothing.²⁹ 26. We were afraid³⁰ that you would come¹¹ too late. 27. Your grandmother complains that you write to her so rarely.³¹ 28. The children are afraid¹⁴ that it will rain tomorrow. 29. He can go out from time to time, but I don't want him to go out² every evening. 30. I tremble¹⁴ lest your decision may have serious consequences. 31. Children would like to have education come³² to them without trouble. 32. I am ashamed that my brother should have behaved⁴ so badly toward you. 33. Wait until³³ he has answered⁴ your

letter. 34. Our cousins want us to take² a walk with them.
 35. Socrates used to ask the gods that his little house might be filled with true friends.

¹ *désirer*. ² see remark (3) under the verb *Vouloir* in chapter on Modal Verbs. ³ *charmé*. ⁴ past subjunctive. ⁵ present subjunctive. ⁶ *le plus tôt possible*; place immediately after the verb. ⁷ construe: 'allow that I tell (*pres. subj.*) you the truth.' ⁸ *exiger*. ⁹ construe: 'that one punish (*pres. subj.*) you.' ¹⁰ past definite. ¹¹ imperfect subjunctive. ¹² *que ce sacrifice s'exécût*. ¹³ *agir davantage*. ¹⁴ the negative adverb *ne* is used expletively after *empêcher* and *éviter* before a personal verb-form (*always a subjunctive*); and also after all verbs or expressions of fear or apprehension (*craindre, trembler, appréhender, avoir peur, de peur, de crainte*, etc.), when these are used affirmatively, or interrogatively without implied negation.* ¹⁵ construe: 'that his plan succeed.' ¹⁶ *accueillir*. ¹⁷ construe: 'that you of it will have some regret.' ¹⁸ *prendre*. ¹⁹ 'that she wait' (*pres. subj.*). ²⁰ *souhaiter*. ²¹ *faire un bon*. ²² *aimerais*. ²³ *ne . . . qu'une seule*. ²⁴ *se réjouir*. ²⁵ *qu'on me . . .* ²⁶ *désolé*. ²⁷ 'not truthful' = *menteur*. ²⁸ *regretter*. ²⁹ *à ne rien faire*. ³⁰ imperfect of *craindre*; see note 14. ³¹ *donniez si rarement de vos nouvelles*. ³² construe: 'would like that instruction should come' (*imperf. subj.*) . . . ³³ *que*.

Subjunctive after Conjunctions and Verbs of Negation.

Exercise 38.

1. Although Europe is smaller than America, it is much more thickly¹ populated. 2. I cannot forgive you before you have made² to me the confession of your faults. 3. My sister will join you next³ week in case you are still in London. 4. Come after us to-morrow evening unless⁴ it rains. 5. Yes, I will punish you until I have cured⁵ you of your laziness. 6. Although it is fertile, your field needs cultivation. 7. Whatever⁶ you may do, I shall always⁷ be your friend. 8. Mortals, whatever⁷ they may be, are equal before the law. 9. God has

* The Minister's decree makes the use of the expletive *ne* no longer obligatory in either of these cases.

made man compassionate, in order that he may be helpful. 10. I do not deny⁸ that he is very eloquent. 11. Speak louder, so that everybody can hear you. 12. Before I go out, I want to give you a little money. 13. Do you doubt⁸ that⁹ long-continued prosperity begets negligence and pride? 14. However rare¹⁰ real love¹¹ may be, it is less so than real¹² friendship. 15. Read over your lesson so that you may know it better. 16. Behave in such a way¹³ that everybody will speak well¹⁴ of you. 17. It cannot be denied¹⁵ that the elephant's trunk has several advantages over the human¹⁶ hand. 18. I will stay here until he comes back. 19. I have given you a good education so that you may be happy. 20. I doubt if¹⁷ they are convinced. 21. Whatever¹⁷ the merit¹¹ of a man may be, he cannot escape envy. 22. It seems to me absurd to deny⁸ that there is a ruling¹ intelligence in the world. 23. Let us go home before it gets dark.¹⁸ 24. The moon is the smallest of the planets, although it¹⁹ appears the largest.²⁰ 25. Don't talk so loud for fear that²¹ somebody will hear you. 26. Arrange it so that²² I can see her. 27. You will have this house provided you pay the worth of it. 28. She will remain faithful to me until I can marry her. 29. Far from being² lazy, this boy is working well. 30. Suppose he consents to your proposition, what advantage will you get²³ from it? 31. I do not doubt⁸ that your perseverance will overcome²⁴ all obstacles. 32. Do not start without hearing² from me. 33. I have promised to explain his reasons to you, not that²⁵ I believe one word of what he says.

¹ omit this word. ² present subjunctive. ³ place after word modified. ⁴ *ne* is used expletively after *à moins que* (unless), or *que* used for *à moins que*.* ⁵ past subjunctive. ⁶ use pronoun form. ⁷ use adjective form. ⁸ words or expressions of 'doubt' or 'denial,' if used negatively (or *interrogatively* with *implied negation*), require *ne* before the following or dependent verb; * observe that they do not require *ne* if used affirmatively

* The recent decree allows the omission of *ne* in this case.

(or *interrogatively* with *implied affirmation*). ⁹ insert *une*; 'long-continued' = *longue*. ¹⁰ insert *que*. ¹¹ reverse positions of subject and predicate. ¹² *véritable*. ¹³ *de telle sorte que*. ¹⁴ *dire du bien*; see a of rule for sequence of tenses, page 78. ¹⁵ *on ne peut disconvenir*; see note 8. ¹⁶ 'the hand of man.' ¹⁷ *que*. ¹⁸ *faire nuit*. ¹⁹ insert 'to us.' ²⁰ *grosse*. ²¹ see note 14 under Exercise 37. ²² *faites en sorte que*. ²³ *retirer*. ²⁴ *vaincre*. ²⁵ *non pas que*.

CASE II.

The Subjunctive depending upon Impersonal Constructions.

1. Impersonal verbs or constructions which express **reality, certainty, or probability** govern the indicative. Ex.: *il est certain, évident, positif, hors de doute que; il est clair, établi, prouvé, remarquable, incontestable que; il est probable, vraisemblable, naturel que; il s'ensuit que, il résulte que, il arrive que*, etc.

When these are used *negatively* or *interrogatively*, they no longer express **certainty**, and consequently govern the subjunctive.

2. Impersonal verbs or constructions which express **possibility, necessity, appreciation, negation, restriction, or any other similar idea**, govern the subjunctive. Examples:—

Possibility (or with an element of negation): *il est possible, il se peut que, il est impossible, il est douteux, rare, difficile que, il est faux, il est singulier que*, etc.

Necessity: *il faut, il est nécessaire, il est urgent, il est indispensable que, il importe*, etc.

Appreciation or sentiment: *il est bon, il est mauvais, il est juste que, il est heureux, malheureux, préférable que, il convient, il vaut mieux que, il est triste, il est étonnant que, il est inutile que*, etc.

Also the following, which are equivalent to impersonal constructions: *c'est assez que, c'est beaucoup que, c'est peu que, c'est dommage* (a pity) *que*, etc.

Note. — *Il semble* and *il paraît que*, expressing possibility only, govern the subjunctive, but when preceded by a personal pronoun object, as *il me semble*, *il me paraît*, they express a thought, and govern the indicative.

Exercise 39.

1. It¹ is probable that my cousin is at home, but it is not probable that he will have² time to see you. 2. It often³ happens that one is deceived. 3. We must⁴ have finished⁵ this work this evening. 4. It is evident that your father is very proud of you. 5. It is beyond doubt that this man is guilty. 6. It is incontestable that you are a genius of the first order.⁶ 7. It is singular that he should start² after all that he has said. 8. It is rare that an upright⁸ heart is not a noble⁷ heart. 9. You must⁴ not forget that men do not love to admire you. 10. It seems to me that you are enjoying yourself here. 11. The result is⁸ that my brother has lost his position. 12. It is a pity that the weather is not fine. 13. It is shameful that you should not know² how⁹ to read at your age. 14. It is possible that you are gentle and kind, but you have never loved. 15. My name is little known, but it is enough for me that my friends do not forget it. 16. It is strange that you do not recognize him. 17. It is just that you should be² repaid all the money that you have spent for me. 18. It would be ridiculous that you should pretend¹⁰ to⁹ know everything.¹¹ 19. It is right¹² that children should amuse² themselves after work. 20. It is time that the light should reach the lowest¹³ ranks of society. 21. Does it not often³ happen that we¹⁴ smile upon flattery while¹⁵ despising it? 22. It is not true¹⁶ that there are² savages who have² no idea¹⁷ of Divinity. 23. It seems that nature has given us pride to spare us the sorrow of knowing¹⁸ our imperfections. 24. I must⁴ know what to expect.¹⁹ 25. It is rare that a mother does not delude herself about her children. 26. These men cannot prove their innocence, but does it follow⁸ that they are

guilty? 27. It is important that you should send me as soon as possible the papers that I have asked you for.⁹ 28. It may be that I am richer than²⁰ you think. 29. Is it possible that he denies a thing so evident? 30. It is wise²¹ that you should accept² his invitation. 31. It is proper that you should make your excuses to him. 32. It is shameful that men²² should have² so many diseases, for good morals produce health. 33. It is seldom that one does not acquire prudence with age.²³ 34. It is not enough²⁴ that you should write him. 35. You had²⁵ a pretty watch; it is too bad that you have lost it. 36. It is better that you should throw up the game.²⁶ 37. You must⁴ not be afraid of offending me.

¹ review rules for *ce* or *il* before *être*, page 25. ² present subjunctive. ³ place after the word modified. ⁴ *il faut que* . . . ⁵ past subjunctive. ⁶ *rang*, m. ⁷ *élevé*; see note 3. ⁸ *il s'ensuit que*. ⁹ omit this word. ¹⁰ imperfect subjunctive. ¹¹ must precede *savoir*. ¹² *bon*. ¹³ *parvenir jusqu'aux derniers*. ¹⁴ *on*. ¹⁵ *tout en*. ¹⁶ it is not true = *il est faux*. ¹⁷ *notion*, f. ¹⁸ *connaître*. ¹⁹ *à quoi m'en tenir*. ²⁰ in comparisons of inequality, if the verb of the principal clause is in the affirmative, *ne* is placed immediately before the verb of the dependent clause; * but this *ne* is not required if the first verb is negative. ²¹ *prudent*. ²² *c'est une honte pour les hommes qu'ils* . . . ²³ *les années*. ²⁴ *il ne suffit pas*. ²⁵ imperfect. ²⁶ *quitter la partie*.

CASE III.

The Subjunctive in Relative Clauses.

1. When the dependent clause is introduced by the relative pronouns *qui*, *que*, *dont*, *où*, the indicative mood is used if the verb of the independent clause expresses something that is **certain, positive, or actual**; the subjunctive is used if the action or state expressed by the verb, represents something **still uncertain, not yet found or discovered, or the existence of which is even doubtful**. Compare the following sentences: *je cherche un lieu où je sois tranquille*; *j'ai trouvé un lieu où je suis tranquille*.

* In this case also, the recent decree tolerates the omission of *ne*.

The first sentence states that I am looking for a place where I shall be quiet, but I do not know if I shall find it, if it exists. The second states that such a place exists, for I have found it. Following are similar examples: indiquez-moi une personne **qui connaisse** cette affaire; indiquez-moi une personne **qui connaît** cette affaire. J'habiterai une maison **qui soit** au bord de l'eau; j'habiterai une maison **qui est** au bord de l'eau.

2. When the relative clause depends upon an expression of **restriction, negation, or an interrogation equivalent to a negation**, the verb of the relative clause is put in the subjunctive. Examples:—

Restriction = il y a peu d'hommes **qui sachent** sacrifier leurs intérêts.

Negation = il n'y a **plus** personne **qui sache** l'histoire.

Interrogation equivalent to negation = y a-t-il un homme **qui puisse** dire qu'il est toujours heureux?

3. The verb of the relative clause is also put in the subjunctive when that clause depends upon **an adjective in the superlative degree, or upon such expressions as, le seul, l'unique, le premier, le dernier**. Ex.: Le fils de Napoléon III est **le plus** joli enfant **que j'aie** jamais vu; vous êtes **la première** personne **qui m'ait** parlé de cette affaire. Such absolute, general, or emphatic statements may not be strictly true. Their excessive affirmation is counterbalanced by the use of the subjunctive, in which there is always an element of negation.

Exercise 40.

1. Show me a road that leads to her village. 2. I am looking for a house that will suit¹ my wife. 3. Choose a place where you will be comfortable.² 4. I want a horse that I can drive myself. 5. There was need of³ a man who knew⁴ the spirit of the nation. 6. There is no one who has not some motive for sorrow.⁵ 7. It is only⁶ genius that can⁷ reach the

sublime. 8. If I lived in the country, I should want an apartment from which⁸ I could⁹ take in¹⁰ a vast horizon. 9. Show me the palace that belongs to the King¹¹ of Italy. 10. Do not marry a man who is much older than you. 11. The movements of the stars are the most regular that we know.⁴ 12. Innocent¹² pleasures are the only ones⁷ that are not¹³ followed by¹⁴ some bitterness. 13. There is no one in¹⁵ the world who has as much need of help as I have.¹⁶ 14. There are few kings who know how⁷ to govern. 15. I have need of a society that I can love. 16. The least that you can do is¹⁷ to¹⁴ offer an indemnity for the damage that you have caused. 17. Sincerity is the most important quality that one should¹⁸ look for in a story. 18. Nothing proves that this man is guilty. 19. Always¹⁹ use a language that is simple and clear. 20. There are few people who are satisfied with their lot. 21. Education¹⁹ is the only blessing that fortune cannot¹⁸ take from us.²⁰ 22. There is not a¹⁴ poet who has not¹⁸ drawn all his philosophy from the ancients. 23. Reason is the most precious¹⁸ gift that God has made to man. 24. Formerly, the Venetians were the only ones⁷ who manufactured⁹ and sold⁹ mirrors. 25. The most beautiful things that an author can put in his books, are the sentiments that come to him from his youth. 26. Is there a man who can satisfy everybody? 27. There is no²¹ man that fortune does not¹⁸ come to visit once in his life. 28. Do not say anything that can depress those who are listening to you. 29. The temple of Solomon was²² the first that men consecrated²⁸ to the true²⁴ God. 30. I would like to live in a country whose climate was¹ mild. 31. There is no²¹ disguise that can long hide love where it exists,²⁹ nor feign it where it does²⁹ not. 32. That is²⁵ the best wine that I ever drank.²⁸ 33. Sainte-Beuve is assuredly one of the most agreeable talkers that I have heard. 34. She is the last woman that I should want⁹ to have for a⁷ friend. 35. Man is a strange animal; I am not the first one⁷ who has said so.²⁶

36. I am the only friend that has remained faithful to you.
 37. Rossini was one of the wittiest¹² men that I have ever⁷ seen.
 38. There is not a single people of antiquity that did not make human sacrifices.²⁷

¹ present subjunctive. ² à votre aise. ³ il fallait. ⁴ connaître; what tense? ⁵ d'affliction. ⁶ il n'y a que. ⁷ omit this word. ⁸ d'où.
⁹ imperfect subjunctive. ¹⁰ embrasser. ¹¹ no capital. ¹² place after word modified. ¹³ use *ne* but not *pas*. ¹⁴ de. ¹⁵ à. ¹⁶ must be preceded by *en*. ¹⁷ c'est. ¹⁸ devoir. ¹⁹ instruction, f. ²⁰ nous ravir.
²¹ ne . . . point. ²² est. ²³ past subjunctive. ²⁴ véritable; see note 12.
²⁵ voilà bien. ²⁶ l'. ²⁷ turn; 'that did not sacrifice (*past subj.*) some victims human.'

CASE IV.

The Subjunctive in Negative or Interrogative Sentences.

1. Verbs of thought or of expression like *croire, penser, espérer, compter, savoir, connaître, dire, s'imaginer, supposer, déclarer, assurer, affirmer, soutenir*, etc., and also impersonal constructions like *il est vrai, il est clair, il est certain* govern the indicative when used affirmatively.

They also govern the indicative when used negatively, if there is no uncertainty in the mind of the person speaking concerning the reality or actuality of the action or fact in question. If there is such doubt, the subjunctive should be used. Notice the great difference in meaning in the following sentences; *mon ami ne sait pas que son père est malade* (= *his father is ill; I know it, but he does not*); *mon ami ne sait pas que son père soit malade* (= *my friend does not know whether or not his father is ill, and neither do I*).

2. When *croire, penser, savoir*, etc., are used interrogatively, the idea of doubt or certainty in the mind of the speaker is again clearly indicated by the use of the subjunctive or indicative in the second verb. Ex.: *savez-vous que cet enfant fait*

des progrès? (= *this child is improving; do you know it?*); savez-vous que cet enfant fasse des progrès? (= *I do not know if this child is improving; could you tell me if he is?*).

Exercise 41.

1. You believe that this man is your friend, but I do not believe that he is.¹ 2. He has gone to² South America, but I do not think that he will make a³ fortune there. 3. Is it true that your friend has written a beautiful novel? 4. This child does not always⁴ tell the truth, but is it certain that he is deceiving you in this? 5. Mary declares that our uncle is rich, but I do not think he is.¹ 6. You imagine that I am happy; no one else⁵ here thinks that I am.¹ 7. I do not even⁴ hope that you will consent⁵ to my proposition. 8. My mother expects⁶ that we shall wait for her a little while, but she does not expect that we shall wait⁵ two hours. 9. Do not believe that happiness depends upon riches. 10. What makes you think that we had a good time?⁷ 11. Your teacher says that you are often absent;⁸ is it true that you are?⁵ 12. Do you think that it is necessary¹⁰ to believe all that the masses¹¹ say? 13. I do not believe that you are wrong, but I cannot¹³ affirm that you are right. 14. I have never noticed that you were¹³ sad. 15. I do not imagine that you are a bad woman. 16. Do you know that your mother has arrived? 17. Do not believe that you inspire¹⁴ me with³ the least envy. 18. Is it true that I have only twenty-three years to live? 19. I do not think that I can go to see you tomorrow. 20. We did not know¹⁵ that it would be necessary¹⁰ to take that journey. 21. Do you believe that the soul is immortal? 22. Don't you know that two and two make four? 23. I do not insist that the¹⁶ man is my friend. 24. I do not believe that God is cruel. 25. I shall never⁴ believe that you have forgotten me. 26. "You are ignorant fellows!"¹⁷ cried the Greek; "do you not know that Chaos

is the³ father of all?" 27. I do not expect⁶ that the war will be⁵ long. 28. My cousin does not yet⁴ know that her mother is dead.

¹ must be preceded by *le* (so). ² *partir pour*. ³ omit this word. ⁴ place after the word modified. ⁵ present subjunctive. ⁶ *compter*. ⁷ past subjunctive of *s'amuser*. ⁸ 'are absent' = *s'absenter*. ⁹ turn: 'that you absent yourself thus.' ¹⁰ *falloir*. ¹¹ *la foule*; place after the predicate, which must be in the singular. ¹² use *ne* but not *pas*. ¹³ imperfect subjunctive. ¹⁴ *faire*. ¹⁵ indicative imperfect. ¹⁶ *cel*. ¹⁷ *des ignorants*.

23. MINOR CASES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

a. When the dependent clause beginning with *que*, precedes the independent clause, the verb is always put in the subjunctive. Ex.: *que vous soyez condamné ou non, l'opinion public sera contre vous.*

b. In such sentences as: '*Puissiez-vous réussir!*' '*Qu'il vienne!*' '*Que la victoire vous soit favorable!*' '*Vive le roi!*' etc., the subjunctive verb depends upon a verb of desire or wish understood, thus: '*je souhaite (désire) que vous puissiez réussir,*' etc.

c. *Savoir* is the only verb of the language which can be used independently in the subjunctive, and then only in the first person singular, negatively. Ex.: *je ne sache pas qu'il soit mon ami.* This implies stronger negation than '*je ne sais pas qu'il soit mon ami.*'

Que je sache, from the Latin '*quod sciam,*' is used for *je ne pense pas que je (le) sache.* Ex.: *est-ce que Marie est sortie? Non pas que je sache.*

d. The subjunctive is also found in the cry of sentinels: '*Qui vive?*' This is not properly a subjunctive, but is probably borrowed from the Italian '*Chi vive?*'

e. The conjunction *si* governs the indicative, but in dependent clauses, that conjunction is replaced by *que*; in such cases, the subjunctive and not the indicative must be used. Ex.:

s'il fait beau et que nous ayons le temps, nous sortirons, instead of s'il fait beau et si nous avons le temps.

Exercise 42.

1. Whether it rains¹ or not,² I will expect you to-morrow.
 2. Whether he comes¹ to-morrow or next week, it makes no difference to me.³ 3. May⁴ you be as happy as you deserve to be!⁵ 4. May we always⁶ be friends! 5. If he wants to see me in private, let him come⁴ early to-morrow morning.
 6. May⁴ peace be with you! May God protect you! 7. God grant⁷ that my presentiment may not be fulfilled!⁸ 8. God be praised for⁹ the good news¹⁰ that you bring me. 9. No one has come yet¹¹ that I know of.¹² 10. Let⁴ hatred and resentment die promptly in your heart! 11. May God reward you for⁹ your generosity! 12. I do not know¹³ that there are men wholly bad or wholly good. 13. Long live the Republic! God bless the Queen! 14. God preserve us from another¹³ war! 15. Perish⁴ the traitor who has caused¹⁴ our defeat! 16. Let him do what he likes!¹⁵ 17. If he wants me to believe him, let him tell the truth. 18. I do not know¹³ anything¹⁶ more beautiful.

¹ see *a* under Minor Cases of the Subjunctive. ² *faire beau*. ³ *cela m'est égal*. ⁴ see *b*. ⁵ must be preceded by *le* (so). ⁶ place after word modified. ⁷ present subjunctive of *vouloir*. ⁸ *se réaliser*. ⁹ *de*. ¹⁰ singular. ¹¹ place between auxiliary and participle. ¹² see *c*. ¹³ *d'une nouvelle*. ¹⁴ *est cause de*. ¹⁵ future of *plaire*, preceded by *lui*. ¹⁶ insert *de*.

23. SEQUENCE OF TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE WITH THOSE OF THE INDICATIVE.

a. When the verb of the independent clause is a *present*, *future*, or *imperative*, the verb of the dependent clause is put in the *present subjunctive* when one is speaking of a present or future action, and in the *past subjunctive* to speak of a past

action. Ex. : je ne crois pas qu'il ait tort = *I do not believe that he is wrong*; je ne crois pas qu'il ait eu tort = *I do not believe that he was wrong*.

b. When the verb of the independent clause is in one of the tenses of the *past* or in the *conditional*, the verb of the dependent clause is put in the *imperfect subjunctive* to speak of a present or future action,* and in the *pluperfect subjunctive*, to speak of a past action. Ex. : je craignais que vous ne partissiez trop tard (*aujourd'hui, ou demain*) = *I was afraid that you might start too late*; je craignais que vous ne fussiez parti trop tard (*hier, la semaine dernière*) = *I was afraid that you had started too late*.

24. PRINCIPAL CASES OF THE AGREEMENT OF THE PAST PARTICIPLE.

Case I. The Past Participle used **without the Auxiliary**.

Case II. The Past Participle used with **Être**.

Case III. The Past Participle used with **Avoir**.

Case IV. The Past Participle of **Reflexive Verbs**.

Rule for Case I.

The past participle used without the auxiliary agrees, like the adjective, in gender and number with the noun or pronoun to which it relates. Ex. : un fils **aimé**; une fille **aimée** = *a loved son*; *a loved daughter*.

Rule for Case II.

The past participle is found with **être** in two cases : —

a. In the compound tenses of passive verbs : **être aimé**; **être puni** = *to be loved*; *to be punished*.

* The ministerial decree allows the use of the present, instead of the imperfect subjunctive, when the verb of the independent clause is in the conditional.

b. In the compound tenses of certain neuter verbs of motion, like *aller, venir, entrer*, etc.

In both of these cases, the past participle agrees with the subject of the verb.

Rule for Case III.

The past participle used with *avoir*, agrees in gender and number with the direct object if that object precedes the verb.*

It does not agree

a. If the object is indirect.

b. If it follows the verb.

c. The past participles of all neuter verbs conjugated with *avoir* will always be invariable, since these verbs can take no object.

Rule for Case IV.

When found in the compound tenses of reflexive verbs, the auxiliary *être* has the meaning of *avoir*; thus, *je me suis consolé* stands for *j'ai consolé moi*. Therefore, the participles of these verbs come under the third case, that is to say, they agree in gender and number with the direct object if it precedes the verb.* They do not agree

a. If there is no direct object.

b. If the direct object follows the verb.

Ex.: *ma sœur et ma cousine se sont écrit (ont écrit à elles)*. The verb has no direct object; hence, no agreement. *Ma sœur et ma cousine se sont écrit des lettres*. The object follows the verb; hence, no agreement. *Voici les lettres que ma sœur et ma cousine se sont écrites*. *Que* stands for *lettres*, direct object preceding the verb; hence, agreement.

* The recent decree stating that the past participle of verbs conjugated with *avoir*, and the past participle of *reflexive verbs* may hereafter remain invariable in all cases where it is at present customary to make them agree, has since been nullified by the French Academy.

Note.—Minor and exceptional cases of the agreement of the past participle abound in advanced grammars, to which the pupil is referred for further study of this difficult subject. The rules given above will be found sufficient to meet the needs of elementary composition.

Exercise 43.

CASES I. AND II. OF THE PARTICIPLE.

1. A lie covered by another lie,¹ is a stain replaced by a hole. 2. One never² regrets the hours³ devoted to study. 3. An obstacle⁴ surmounted, increases pleasure. 4. A hundred years passed in idleness are not worth one hour well employed. 5. These fruits turned⁵ red when they began⁶ to ripen. 6. All sins entered⁶ the world through⁷ intemperance. 7. Nature presents to us successively skies⁸ strewn with stars, and skies⁸ covered with clouds, prairies dotted with flowers, forests stripped by⁹ frosts, and fields golden with⁷ the harvests. 8. Repelled by fortune, men throw themselves back upon hope. 9. Few persons are endowed with a pure² and delicate² taste. 10. Animals and plants were¹⁰ adored¹¹ in Egypt. 11. A beautiful thought well expressed, pleases in¹² all ages.¹³ 12. My sister has come to spend the winter in Italy. 13. The earth is fertilized by the sun. 14. Eloquence was¹⁴ born before the rules of rhetoric. 15. Voltaire and Rousseau died⁶ the same year. 16. Cherries were¹⁵ brought from Asia to Rome by Lucullus. 17. Good news are always well received.¹⁶ 18. Noses were⁶ invented before spectacles. 19. These children are spoiled by everybody. 20. Since the invention of powder, battles have become less bloody. 21. The Scotch are attached to their country; they love their mountains with their summits covered with snow. 22. Paper, window-glass, and chimneys were unknown to the¹⁷ Romans. 23. Our most sumptuous monuments will be effaced by time. 24. The natural² qualities of the horse are perfected by education. 25. Men seem born for society. 26. France has been governed by three

- races of kings. 27. This letter will be handed to you by my brother-in-law. 28. Virtue excepted, one may sacrifice everything¹⁸ to friendship. 29. The French language is spoken in Europe by all educated¹⁹ men. 30. Children open their²⁰ eyes as soon as they are born. 31. We shall be judged according to our works. 32. The French were⁸ sooner civilized than the other peoples of Europe. 33. They are delighted with everything.

¹ insert *c'*. ² place after word modified. ³ *moment*, m. ⁴ *la peine*. ⁵ past indefinite of *devenir*. ⁶ past indefinite. ⁷ *par*. ⁸ *des nuits*, f. pl. ⁹ insert *les*. ¹⁰ imperfect. ¹¹ when a participle refers to two or more nouns, some of which are masculine and others feminine, it agrees in the masculine plural. ¹² *dans*. ¹³ *temps*, m. pl. ¹⁴ present. ¹⁵ past definite. ¹⁶ *accueillir*. ¹⁷ turn; 'were (*imperfect*) not known of the'; see also note 11. ¹⁸ must precede its verb. ¹⁹ *éclairé*; place after the noun. ²⁰ *les*.

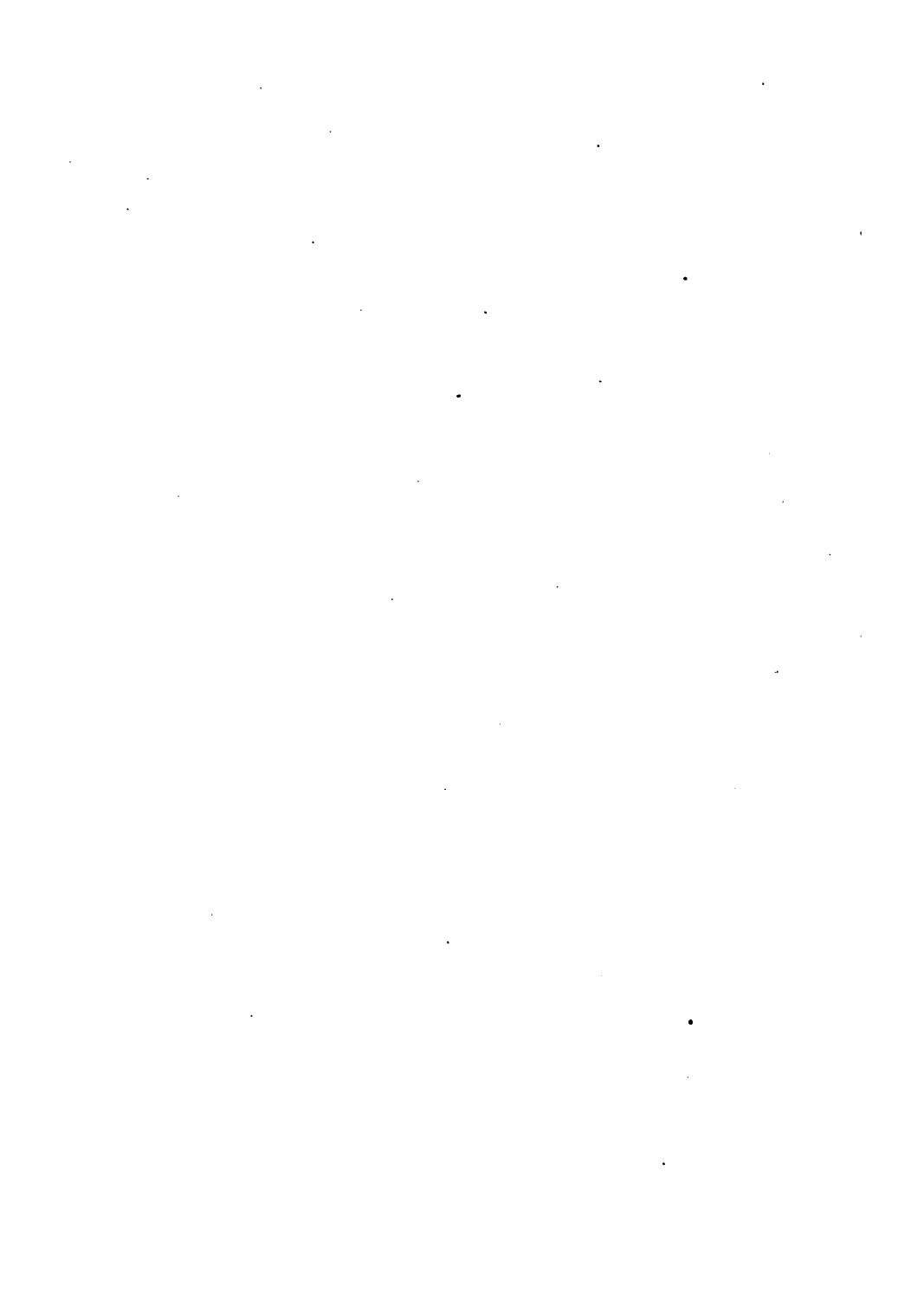
Exercise 44.

CASES III. AND IV. OF THE PARTICIPLE.

1. Force has never persuaded any one.¹ 2. The roses that we picked² this morning are already faded. 3. It was³ not chance that created⁴ us. 4. All nations have conceived the idea of God. 5. Among⁵ the Egyptians, a son was obliged to continue in⁶ the profession that his father had exercised.⁶ 6. Many who went to sleep⁷ rich, have awakened poor. 7. Contrary⁸ winds⁹ have conducted us to¹⁰ your isle. 8. Colbert repaired¹¹ the evils which a stormy⁸ reign had caused.⁶ 9. Preserve precious the friends that you have made. 10. Tell¹² me the story that you have related to her. 11. The judges declared¹³ themselves in¹⁴ his favor. 12. They had imagined¹⁵ that we had deceived⁷ them. 13. The Greeks made themselves illustrious¹⁶ in the arts. 14. The admiration which certain¹⁷ scholars have professed for the ancients, has often degenerated into¹⁴ fanaticism. 15. I have not received any of the letters that you have written me. 16. At Rome, the censors corrected¹⁸ the abuses which the law had not foreseen. 17. Charlemagne was³

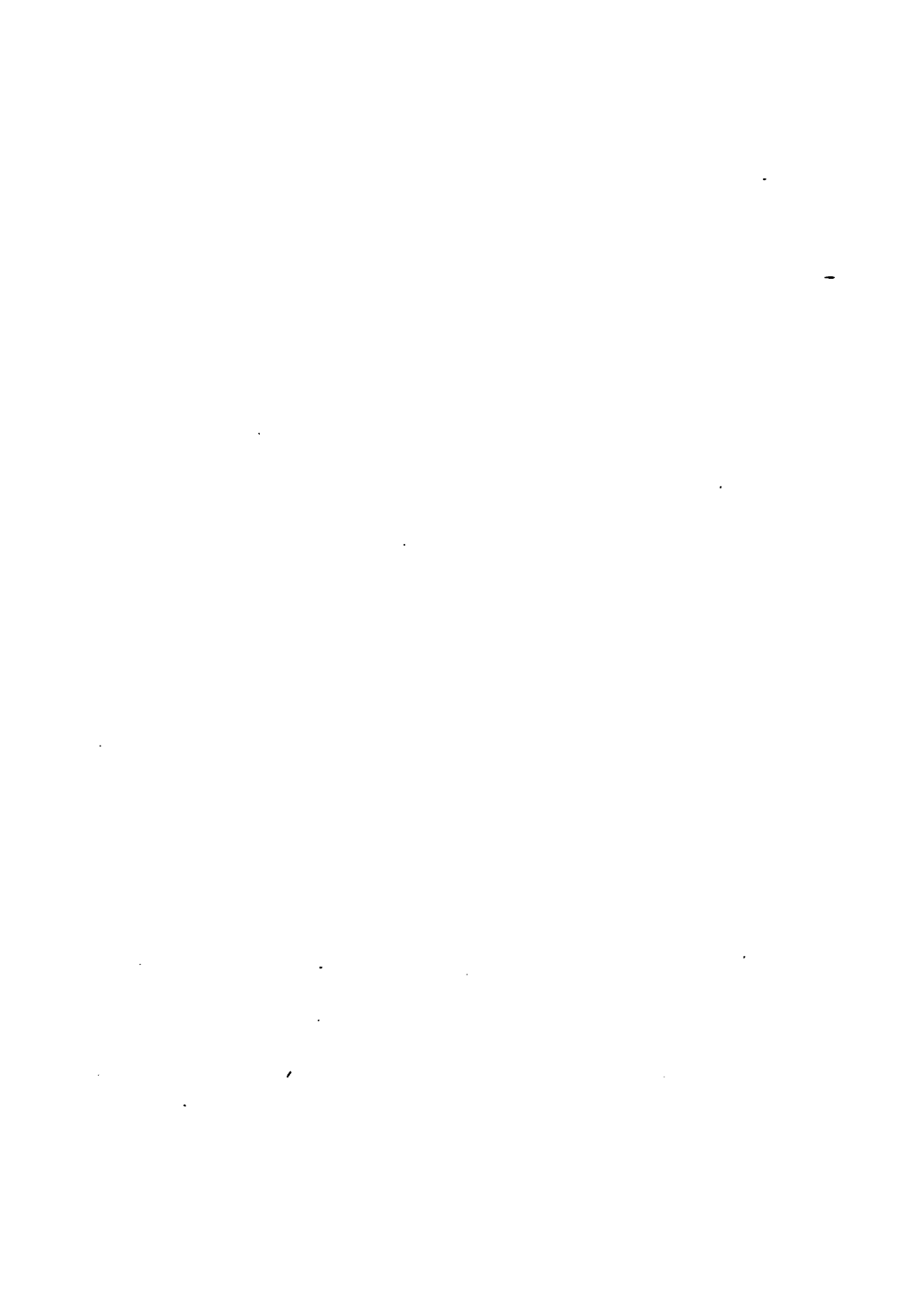
the first of the French kings who founded¹⁹ schools. 18. He often⁸ visited the schools that he had founded. 19. We have not written to each other.²⁰ 20. Switzerland is not such as it has been described by most travellers.²¹ 21. It is easy to be indulgent toward²² the ingratitude of men when one has not experienced it. 22. This cathedral has made the reputation of the architect who built² it. 23. Turenne is one of the greatest generals that France has had.¹⁹ 24. The battle of Wagram is one of the greatest that Napoleon has fought.¹⁹ 25. The ancients imagined¹⁵ that the earth was³ motionless. 26. Hearts⁹ less brave would have become discouraged²³ before so many obstacles to overcome. 27. The advice²⁴ that your friend gave you was good; why did you not follow it? 28. She showed¹¹ us the laces and jewels that her old aunt had bequeathed²⁵ to her. 29. How many governments have succeeded one another²⁶ in France in the course of²⁷ one century!

¹ this sentence should contain three negative words. ² past indefinite. ³ present. ⁴ *chez*. ⁵ omit this word. ⁶ reverse the positions of the subject and predicate, thus: 'that had exercised (*pluperfect*) his father'; this order is frequently found in French relative clauses. ⁷ pluperfect. ⁸ place after the word modified. ⁹ must be preceded by *des*. ¹⁰ *dans*. ¹¹ past definite. ¹² *raconter*. ¹³ past indefinite of *se prononcer*. ¹⁴ *en*. ¹⁵ pluperfect of *se figurer* or *s'imaginer*, observe that *se* is here an indirect object. ¹⁶ past indefinite of *s'illustrer*. ¹⁷ *quelques*. ¹⁸ imperfect. ¹⁹ past subjunctive. ²⁰ replace 'each other' by the reflexive pronoun *nous* which here has a reciprocal meaning. ²¹ turn: 'as (*que*) most travellers have described it.' ²² *pour*. ²³ *se décourager*. ²⁴ plural. ²⁵ pluperfect; for word order, see note 6. ²⁶ *se*, which here stands for an indirect object. ²⁷ 'in the course of' = *depuis*.



PART II.

EXERCISES IN COMPOSITION.



EASY PROSE COMPOSITION.

1. THE CHILDHOOD OF DUGUESCLIN.

Note.—In this, and in following exercises, the student should be required to give reasons for the use of the past definite or imperfect tenses.

Duguesclin, son of a poor¹ Breton² lord, was born³ in⁴ 1320, in a castle situated near Dinan. He was⁵ a very ugly⁶ child. He had⁷ a pug nose and green eyes;⁸ he was⁷ very short,¹ with⁹ broad shoulders and long arms; but he showed⁷ early that he would be very brave. When he⁵ played⁷ with the children of his age, it was always games of war that he preferred;¹⁰ and when he was¹¹ fifteen years old,¹² there was⁷ not in all¹³ Brittany a knight capable of competing¹⁴ with him.

It was¹⁵ at the age of fifteen¹⁶ that Duguesclin began³ to¹⁷ serve in the armies; he soon¹⁷ became³ a good captain. He was⁷ not only brave, but¹² he was also very clever. The dauphin Charles, who was very fond of him,¹⁸ put³ him at the head of a little army, and charged⁸ him to fight Charles the Bad, who possessed⁷ several cities and castles¹⁵ in⁴ Normandy, and who was⁷ the ally of the English.

¹ *petit*. ² use small letter, and place after the noun. ³ past definite. ⁴ *en*. ⁵ *c'était*. ⁶ place 'very ugly' after the noun. ⁷ imperfect. ⁸ turn: 'the nose pug and the eyes green.' ⁹ insert *de*. ¹⁰ it was . . . preferred; *c'était toujours à la guerre*. ¹¹ past definite of *avoir*. ¹² omit this word. ¹³ insert *la*. ¹⁴ *de se mesurer*. ¹⁵ *c'est*. ¹⁶ insert *ans*. ¹⁷ place after the word modified. ¹⁸ who was . . . him; *qui l'aimait beaucoup*.

A few days after the accession to the throne¹ of Charles, Duguesclin beat² Charles the Bad at Cocherel, near³ Évreux, and thus began the new reign by a brilliant victory.⁴

2. DUGUESCLIN AND THE "FREE" COMPANIES."

In those days,⁶ the king of France had⁷ soldiers whom he
5 paid, and who served in⁸ companies under the orders of
captains. These soldiers were, for the most part, Italians,⁹
Swiss, Germans, etc. They made¹⁰ war to earn the pay that
was given them,¹¹ but also to enrich themselves by pillage.¹²
They were¹³ brigands who robbed and massacred the peas-
10 ants of France, and these unfortunates dreaded the soldiers
of their king as much as those of the king of England.

As Charles V., at the beginning¹⁴ of his reign, was¹⁵ at¹⁶
peace with the English, he wished² to rid himself of the
"companies," and he commanded² Duguesclin to take them
15 to¹⁸ Spain. Duguesclin went to¹⁷ their principal chiefs, who
were¹⁵ at Chalon-sur-Saône. He knew¹⁵ them all, for he
had already fought against them or with them. He was²
received very joyously, and drank² with them the best wines
of Burgundy. He promised² them large¹⁸ sums of money, if
20 they would¹⁹ follow him in the country where he wished¹⁹ to
lead them, and they followed² him to¹⁶ Spain.

¹ accession . . . throne; *l'avènement*. ² past definite. ³ *auprès de*.
⁴ and thus . . . victory; *et étreonna par cette victoire le nouveau règne*.
⁵ *Grandes*. ⁶ *dans ce temps-là*. ⁷ all verbs in this paragraph, excepting
the infinitives, must be in the imperfect, because they denote habit or
custom in the past. ⁸ *par*. ⁹ put *des* before each one of these proper
nouns. ¹⁰ insert definite article. ¹¹ put in the active voice, thus: 'that
one gave (*imperfect*) them.' ¹² *en pillant*. ¹³ *c'étaient des*. ¹⁴ *au début*.
¹⁵ imperfect. ¹⁶ *en*. ¹⁷ went to; *alla trouver*. ¹⁸ *de grosses*. ¹⁹ imper-
fect of *vouloir*.

3. DUGUESCLIN A¹ PRISONER IN SPAIN.

Spain was² then divided into³ several kingdoms, among which was² that of Castile. Peter the Cruel, friend of the English, was reigning in³ Castile at this time.⁴ His brother Henry, the¹ friend of⁵ France, had rebelled⁶ against him. Duguesclin, with the companies, drove⁷ Peter away from⁵ 5 Castile, and Henry became king in⁸ his place.

But the Prince⁹ of Wales arrived⁷ with an army to drive away Henry. He was⁷ victorious, and Duguesclin was⁷ made prisoner. The Prince of Wales, happy to have¹⁰ in⁸ his power the best general of the king of France, conducted⁷ 10 him to Bordeaux. One day, the prince met⁷ Duguesclin in the¹¹ street. "How are¹² you, Bertrand?" said¹³ he to him. "I am¹² very well,¹⁴ my lord, and¹ very¹ pleased,"¹ replied Duguesclin, "for they say¹⁵ that I am the greatest¹⁶ knight in¹⁷ the world, since you will¹⁸ not permit me to 15 ransom myself." It was² the custom in those days,⁴ to set a prisoner free¹⁹ when he had paid his ransom; and Duguesclin was insinuating²⁰ to the Prince of Wales that he was² afraid of him, since he did not permit² him to redeem himself and¹⁷ return to the²¹ king of France. The Prince of 20 Wales was⁷ piqued by this remark.²² "Fix your own ransom,"²³ said he to Duguesclin, who fixed⁷ it at a¹ hundred thousand livres. It was,² for the time, an enormous²⁴ sum. "Where will you get²⁵ this money?" asked the Prince of

¹ omit this word. ² use imperfect, because this tense describes states, conditions, sentiments, or characteristics in the past, considered permanent for the time being. ³ *en*. ⁴ *à cette époque*. ⁵ insert definite article. ⁶ *était révolté*. ⁷ past definite. ⁸ *fut roi à*. ⁹ do not use capital. ¹⁰ *de tenir*. ¹¹ *une*. ¹² present of *aller*. ¹³ past definite of *demander*. ¹⁴ very well; *à merveille*. ¹⁵ *on dit*. ¹⁶ *premier*. ¹⁷ *de*. ¹⁸ present of *vouloir*. ¹⁹ to set . . . free; *qu'un prisonnier fût remis en liberté*. ²⁰ *semblait dire*. ²¹ *auprès du*. ²² *parole*, f. ²³ Fix . . . ransom; *fixez vous-même votre rançon*. ²⁴ place after the noun. ²⁵ future of *prendre*.

Wales. And Duguesclin, who knew¹ that he was loved² in every hut in³ France, replied: "There is not a spinner in France who would not⁴ spin a distaff full to pay my ransom."

4. DUGUESCLIN A⁵ CONSTABLE OF FRANCE.

Duguesclin, once more⁶ free, returned⁷ to⁸ Spain, where
 5 he defeated Peter the Cruel; then he came back to⁸ France,
 where war was beginning again with the English. Charles V.
 gave him the sword of a⁸ Constable. It was⁹ a great honor,¹⁰
 for the dignity of Constable was⁹ one of the highest¹¹ of the
 kingdom of France. Duguesclin, who was⁹ modest, did not
 10 wish⁹ to accept this honor, saying that he was⁹ not of suffi-
 ciently high nobility¹² to command the princes and all the
 nobles who were⁹ in the army;¹³ but Charles V. answered
 him that everybody, even the princes, would obey¹⁴ him.

He was called¹⁵ "the good Constable." The people¹⁴
 15 loved⁹ him because he was brave and because he was good.
 He forbade⁹ his soldiers to do any harm¹⁶ to the weak¹⁸ and
 to those who could⁹ not defend themselves, like the church-
 men, the women, the children, and the poor people.¹⁴

When he died,⁷ he was buried¹⁵ at Saint-Denis, near Paris,
 20 by the side of the¹⁷ tombs of the kings of France.

¹ imperfect of *savoir*, because the verb refers to a fact, not a person.

² put in the active voice, thus: 'that one loved (*imperfect*) him,' etc.

³ *de*. ⁴ *ne voudrait*; omit *pas*. ⁵ omit this word. ⁶ once more;

devenu. ⁷ use past definite, which describes distinct and separate acts occurring at a definite moment in the past. ⁸ *en*. ⁹ see page 89, foot-

note 2. ¹⁰ add *qu'il lui faisait*. ¹¹ *élevées*. ¹² of . . . nobility; *de noblesse assez haute*. ¹³ put in the plural. ¹⁴ put in the singular. ¹⁵ put

in the active voice, thus: 'one called (*imperfect*) him,' ¹⁶ *de faire du mal*. ¹⁷ *auprès des*.

5. EXPLOITS OF¹ CHEVALIER BAYARD.

Bayard was born² at the Château of Bayard, near Grenoble. From his³ childhood, he prepared himself for a military career;⁴ for, in⁵ the castle where he spent his earliest⁶ years, he heard⁷ unceasingly of the exploits of his ancestors, who had fought in⁸ the service of the kings of France. When he had reached⁹ his thirteenth year, his parents sent him to the⁹ Duke¹⁰ of Savoy, who admitted him to the number of his pages.

Six months later,¹¹ the duke took him to Lyons, where Charles VIII. was,¹² to whom some one¹³ spoke of the young page as the¹⁴ boldest rider that any one had ever seen.¹⁵ The king asked the Duke¹⁰ of Savoy to give him this page, who promised¹⁶ to become a good knight. The duke consented to it; and it was¹⁷ thus that Bayard entered⁵ the service of France.

At the age of eighteen, Bayard made his first campaign¹⁸ in Italy, when Charles VIII. went¹⁹ there in 1494. He stayed there during all the reign of Louis XII., and his exploits became celebrated in the entire²⁰ world.

In the interval of battles, he loved¹⁸ to go on little²¹ expeditions in search of the enemy. Being within⁵ a few leagues of Milan, then occupied by Ludovic Sforza, the enemy of Louis XII., he started one fine morning, with

¹ *du.* ² in this historical narrative, translate every English verb that is in a simple past tense and is a real predicate, by the past definite, unless otherwise indicated in these notes. ³ *dès l'.* ⁴ he prepared . . . career; *il se destina au métier des armes.* ⁵ *à.* ⁶ *premières.* ⁷ he heard; *il entendait parler.* ⁸ past anterior of *atteindre.* ⁹ *auprès du.* ¹⁰ do not use capital. ¹¹ *après.* ¹² reverse the positions of the subject and predicate, thus: 'where was (*imperfect*) Charles VIII.' ¹³ *l'on.* ¹⁴ as the; *comme du.* ¹⁵ any one . . . seen; *qu'on eût jamais vu.* ¹⁶ *imperfect.* ¹⁷ *c'est.* ¹⁸ his first campaign; *ses premières armes.* ¹⁹ *se rendre.* ²⁰ place after the word modified. ²¹ to go on little; *à faire de petites.*

fifty cavaliers, to¹ attack three hundred, who were² encamped in front of³ the city.

The combat was a⁴ very hard one,⁴ but Bayard cried :⁵ "Courage, friends !⁶ Let us redouble our⁷ blows." And to
5 the cries of "France ! France !" the little troop put the enemy to flight.⁸ The Frenchmen pursued them, and stopped only⁹ at the gates of Milan ; but Bayard did not stop. He entered¹⁰ the city at a⁷ gallop, still¹¹ pursuing the cavaliers, and he arrived thus at the very gates¹² of Ludovic Sforza's
10 palace, where he was made prisoner.

Ludovic had so much admiration for his courage that he set him at¹³ liberty, without asking¹⁴ him any¹⁵ ransom.

During the battle of Marignan, Bayard fought like a hero. The evening of the first day, he found himself³ in the midst
15 of the enemy,¹⁶ in great danger of being¹⁴ taken or killed. He descended from his horse, and began to¹⁷ creep on his⁷ hands and¹⁸ feet, until he arrived¹⁹ in the midst of the French.

At the end of the battle, Francis I. sent for²⁰ Bayard, and
20 told him that he wished to be knighted²¹ by him. Bayard could² not²² believe that the king wished¹⁹ to do him such an honor.

"Sire," said he to him, "you are the king of so noble a²³ kingdom ; crowned and consecrated, you are knight above
25 all²⁴ other knights." "Friend,⁶" answered the king, "make

¹ to; *pour en*. ² imperfect. ³ in front of; *en avant de*. ⁴ omit this word. ⁵ *disait*. ⁶ this word must be preceded by possessive adjective. ⁷ definite article. ⁸ put . . . flight; *força les cavaliers ennemis à s'enfuir*. ⁹ *ne . . . que*. ¹⁰ insert *dans*. ¹¹ place after word modified. ¹² at . . . gates; *jusqu'aux portes*. ¹³ he set him at; *le fit remettre en*. ¹⁴ remember that all prepositions except *en* govern the infinitive. ¹⁵ *de*. ¹⁶ use the plural form. ¹⁷ *se mettre à*. ¹⁸ repeat preposition and article. ¹⁹ imperfect subjunctive. ²⁰ *faire chercher*. ²¹ that . . . knighted; *qu'il voulait être armé chevalier*. ²² use *ne*, but omit *pas*. ²³ say *un si . . .* ²⁴ *par dessus tous les*.

haste and do my command." Then, Bayard performed¹ the ceremony as it was usually performed.² He touched the king on³ the shoulder three times with his sword, and told him that he dubbed him knight.⁴

Then, he kissed his sword, lifted it in the⁵ air, and exclaimed: "Surely, good sword,⁶ thou shalt be honored above⁷ all others, thou that hast given knighthood to so handsome and so powerful a⁸ king!"

6. ANECDOTES ABOUT⁹ LOUIS XI.

Louis XI., who was¹⁰ the enemy of the nobles,¹¹ pretended¹² to love the poor people¹³ and the burghers. At Paris, there were several burghers whom he used to call "craay,"¹⁴ and he called their wives "gossip."¹⁵ He often went to dine at their houses,¹⁶ but he would punish the burghers who resisted him, quite as¹⁷ harshly as he punished the lords. He loved solitude, and did not like to be looked at or followed¹⁸ when he travelled. The very year of his accession, as he wanted to take a journey, he published throughout¹⁹ the kingdom that those who should follow him would be hanged.

In the castles where he shut himself up, he loved that the few²⁰ companions with whom he lived, should relate²¹ stories to him, and he sometimes told some himself.²² It was²³ also

¹ faire. ² it . . . performed; *comme on la faisait d'ordinaire.* ³ à. ⁴ that he . . . knight; *qu'il l'armait chevalier.* ⁵ en l'. ⁶ see page 92, footnote 6. ⁷ entre. ⁸ un si beau et si puissant. ⁹ sur. ¹⁰ past definite. ¹¹ grands. ¹² this verb, like all others in this selection which describe customary actions, physical habits, or mental characteristics, must be put in the imperfect; the absence of this tense in English is felt in the use of such expressions as 'would,' 'used to,' 'was in the habit,' found before the verb. ¹³ gens, m. pl. ¹⁴ mon compère. ¹⁵ ma commère. ¹⁶ chez eux. ¹⁷ quite as; *tout aussi.* ¹⁸ did not like . . . followed; *ne voulait pas qu'on le regardât ni qu'on le suivît.* ¹⁹ fit publier dans tout. ²⁰ rares. ²¹ contaient. ²² and he . . . himself; *et lui-même, il en contait volontiers.* ²³ c'était.

one of his greatest¹ pleasures to watch² fights of dogs and rats.

He was³ tormented all his life by the fear of death. He believed, like all men of his time,⁴ that his destiny was written in the stars, and he used to consult astrologers to know it. He would pay devout people and hermits, in order that they should ask⁵ God to let him live a long time. He⁶ himself prayed very⁶ often; he wore⁷ around his hat figures in lead, of saints and virgins, before which he used to kneel down. When he prayed to⁸ the Virgin, he would address her as⁸ "My good Lady." He thought that he could win over⁹ saints, like men, by¹⁰ giving money to their churches.

When he felt himself⁸ on the point of death,¹¹ he had brought to his bedside¹² the relics kept in¹³ the Sainte-Chapelle at Paris, hoping that these relics would cure him. He also sent for³ Saint-François de Paule, whom he implored in vain to¹⁴ prolong his life by a miracle.

7. HENRY IV., KING OF NAVARRE.

Henry IV. was born¹⁵ at the Château of Pau. On⁶ the day of his birth, the king of Navarre, his grandfather, made him¹⁶ drink a drop of wine, in order, said he, to give him a robust constitution.¹⁷ Henry was brought up, not as a¹⁸ prince, but as a soldier. He lived¹⁹ like the children of the country,²⁰

¹ *grands*. ² *de regarder des*. ³ *past definite*. ⁴ *of his time; de ce temps-là*. ⁵ *imperfect subjunctive*. ⁶ *omit this word*. ⁷ *avait*. ⁸ *he . . . her as; il lui disait*. ⁹ *win over; gagner à sa cause*. ¹⁰ *en*. ¹¹ *de mourir*. ¹² *he . . . bedside; il fit apporter auprès de son lit*. ¹³ *à*. ¹⁴ *whom . . . in vain; auquel il demanda inutilement de*. ¹⁵ *give a reason for the use of the past definite in this and following verbs*. ¹⁶ *made him; lui fit*. ¹⁷ *tempérament vigoureux*, m. ¹⁸ *not as a; non en*. ¹⁹ *give a reason for the use of the imperfect in this and the following verbs*. ²⁰ *pays*, m.

ran, played, fought with them, and better than they, he climbed the trees and scaled the walls and rocks.

While he was still very young,¹ he came to the court of France. He was a² Protestant and took part in the civil wars. He displayed a brilliant courage.³ He endured⁴ 5 without complaining the fatigues of war, and privations of every kind.⁵

He was⁶ witty and gay, but he was serious when it was necessary to be, and he knew very well how⁷ to make himself obeyed.⁷ He was simple in his manners, affectionate 10 toward all, but he had noble thoughts and felt all⁸ the greatness of the 'country over which⁸ he became king.

Sully was the childhood friend⁹ of Henry IV. He called himself⁶ the "special friend" of the king, but the two friends did not always get on.¹⁰ Sully did not have⁶ an 15 even disposition. He was jealous of the affection which his master showed¹¹ others. Several times, he irritated¹² the king, and it was thought¹³ that they would not be reconciled.¹⁴

Once, when they had been angry at each other some 20 time,¹⁵ Sully came to speak to the king on business.¹⁶ When he had finished,¹⁷ Henry said to him: "Have you nothing else to¹⁸ say to me?" Sully answered that he had not.¹⁹ "Well, I have something to say to you," replied the king.²⁰ Then, he had¹² with Sully a friendly con- 25

¹ while he . . . young; *de bonne heure*. ² omit this word. ³ he displayed . . . courage; *il y montra une éclatante bravoure*. ⁴ imperfect. ⁵ plural. ⁶ see page 94, footnote 19. ⁷ put in the infinitive present. ⁸ of the country over which; *de cette France dont*. ⁹ was . . . friend; *fut le compagnon d'enfance*. ¹⁰ *ne s'entendaient pas toujours*. ¹¹ insert *à d'*. ¹² see page 94, footnote 15. ¹³ *l'on crut*. ¹⁴ reflexive form. ¹⁵ Once, when . . . some time; *un jour qu'ils se boudaient depuis longtemps*. . . ¹⁶ *d'affaires*. ¹⁷ past anterior. ¹⁸ *ne . . . rien autre à*. ¹⁹ that he had not; *que non*. ²⁰ turn: 'I (*moi*), replied the king, (*je*) have something to say to you.'

versation,¹ and,² taking him by the hand, he led him toward a group of courtiers and said to them: "Gentlemen, I love Sully more than ever!"

8. THE YOUTH OF SULLY.

Sully was born in 1560, at the Château of Rosny, near
5 Mantes, of a noble Protestant family.³ At the age of eleven,⁴ he was presented⁵ to Henry, King of Navarre,⁶ who was then eighteen years old. He made him a beautiful court bow, then a pretty speech, and so greatly pleased⁷ the young king that he⁸ kept him near his person.⁹

10 When Henry of Navarre came⁵ to Paris to¹⁰ wed the sister of the king, Charles IX., Sully was¹¹ with him. Both ran a great danger on the eve of¹² Saint Bartholomew. Henry was¹¹ at the Louvre. Charles IX. sent for him¹³ and¹⁴ threatened to have¹⁵ him killed, if he did not be-
15 come¹⁶ a¹⁷ Catholic. "Death or the mass," said he to him, furiously.¹⁸ Henry did not want to die; he answered the king that he preferred¹¹ to go to mass, and was thereby¹⁹ saved.

Sully was then²⁰ living in²¹ the Latin Quarter. He
20 lodged¹¹ with²² a Protestant²⁰ innkeeper, and was attending the courses of a college called Collège de Bourgogne. He

¹ cordial entretien, m. ² replace by *puis*. ³ turn: 'of a family noble, protestant.' ⁴ add 'years.' ⁵ see page 94, footnote 15. ⁶ turn: 'to the king of Navarre, Henry.' ⁷ so greatly pleased; *plut tant au. celui-ci*. ⁸ *auprès de lui*. ⁹ *pour y*. ¹⁰ when, in the course of the narrative, it becomes necessary to introduce subordinate explanations of facts, states, or conditions considered permanent for the time being, the tense changes from the past definite to the imperfect. ¹¹ *la nuit de la*. ¹² *le fit appeler devant lui*. ¹³ repeat the object pronoun. ¹⁴ 'to have,' in the sense of 'to cause' a thing to be done, is rendered by *faire*, followed immediately by the infinitive of the second verb. ¹⁵ imperfect of *se faire*. ¹⁶ omit this word. ¹⁷ *avec fureur*. ¹⁸ *ainsi*. ¹⁹ place after the word modified. ²⁰ *à*. ²¹ *chez*.

was awakened¹ during the night by the cries of the assassins and the groans of the wounded. Two of his servants went out to learn² what was passing.³ They did not return; they were killed⁴ in the street. Sully was⁵ still very young; he was twelve years old; but he had much presence of mind. He dressed,¹ put a big mass-book under his arm, and went down into the street to go to his college. A band of assassins stopped⁶ him; but they saw that he had⁵ a mass-book and believed that he was⁵ a⁹ Catholic. They therefore let him pass.⁷ Sully arrived at the college, and the principal hid him for a few days.

Sully left the⁸ college when the massacre was ended; but, like his master, Henry of Navarre, he became a⁹ Catholic. While Henry of Navarre was retained a⁹ prisoner at the court, Sully lived at Paris; in 1575, Henry escaped, and Sully followed him. Both then declared that they had become Catholics because they had been forced to it, and they became Protestants again. They went over to the¹⁰ Protestants, and took part in¹¹ all the civil wars of the reign of Henry III.

Sully was⁵ fifteen years old when he began to fight in this way.¹² He proved himself right away a⁹ brave and bold soldier. One day, Henry of Navarre, who had seen him fight in¹¹ the first rank, in an encounter where there was⁵ much danger, said to those who stood around him: "There is¹³ a young nobleman of good family; he will some day amount to something good,¹⁴ or I am¹⁵ much mistaken."¹⁶

¹ the narrative proper is resumed; hence, the past definite. ² *savoir*.
³ reflexive form. ⁴ use the active voice. ⁵ see page 96, footnote II.
⁶ verb agrees in the singular. ⁷ turn: *ils le laissèrent donc passer*.
⁸ *sortit du*. ⁹ omit this word. ¹⁰ went over to the; *se rendirent au milieu des*. ¹¹ *à*. ¹² *ainsi*. ¹³ *voilà*. ¹⁴ he will . . . good; *il fera un jour quelque chose de bon*. ¹⁵ future. ¹⁶ *fort trompé*.

9. YOUTH OF RICHELIEU.

Richelieu was born at Paris in 1585. He was¹ the fourth child of a nobleman of² Poitou, who was¹ not rich. He was³ at first destined to the military profession,⁴ and commenced by being a brilliant cavalier. But he had¹ a brother 5 who was¹ Bishop of Luçon, and this brother died.³ Then Richelieu's mother advised⁵ him to become⁵ a⁶ priest, promising⁷ him that she would obtain for him the bishopric of his brother. Richelieu consented, and the cavalier became Bishop of Luçon in 1607; he was¹ then twenty-two 10 years old. His bishopric was¹ one of the poorest in⁸ France. Richelieu was miserably housed;⁹ his chimneys smoked; he had no garden. He performed very well¹⁰ his duties as⁸ bishop, but he was discontented. He longed to come to the court, to¹¹ be a⁶ minister, and to¹¹ play a 15 grand rôle.

During the minority of Louis XIII., Richelieu found favor with¹² the queen, Marie de Médicis, by all kinds of flatteries and compliments. He even became minister¹³ in 1616; but Louis XIII., who was entering upon¹⁴ his four- 20 teenth year, quarrelled with his mother, who was governing the kingdom very badly,¹⁵ and who was obliged to leave the court. Richelieu followed her; during several years, he employed his skill to reconcile the king with his mother. He succeeded;¹⁶ and, to reward him, Marie de Médicis had 25 him appointed¹⁷ cardinal.

Marie de Médicis desired¹⁸ also that Richelieu should

¹ see page 96, footnote 11. ² *du*. ³ narrative is resumed; hence, past definite. ⁴ *au métier des armes*. ⁵ *se faire*. ⁶ omit this word. ⁷ participle must be preceded by *en*. ⁸ *de*. ⁹ *mal logé*. ¹⁰ *au mieux*. ¹¹ *pour*. ¹² found favor with; *se fit bien venir de*. ¹³ he even . . . minister; *il devint même une première fois ministre*. ¹⁴ *dans*. ¹⁵ place after the word modified. ¹⁶ say 'to it.' ¹⁷ *le fit nommer*. ¹⁸ past definite.

become¹ prime minister of Louis XIII. The king did not at first² consent.³ "I know him better than you do," madame," said he to his mother; "he is a man of boundless ambition."⁴ He finished, however, by yielding; and in 1624, Cardinal Richelieu became prime minister of Louis XIII.

At the end of the year 1642, the Cardinal fell seriously ill. He felt⁵ that his end had come. He asked his doctor how much time he had⁷ yet to live. "Twenty-four hours," was the answer.⁸ Richelieu employed his last hours in⁹ preparing himself for⁹ death, but he occupied himself⁷ still with¹⁰ the affairs of the State. He gave the king counsels on what should be done after his death.¹¹ He pointed out to him the men that were to¹² replace him, and then⁴ he expired peacefully.

It is difficult to¹⁰ love Richelieu, for he was⁶ not good and he was⁶ often hypocritical; but it is impossible not to¹² admire him, for he desired¹⁴ the greatness of France, and he gave her this greatness.¹⁵

10. COLBERT, MINISTER OF LOUIS XIV.

Colbert was the⁴ son of a merchant of Rheims, and he²⁰ had raised himself¹⁶ by dint of hard⁴ work to the¹⁷ rank which put⁷ him above the greatest lords.

No one in⁹ the world has ever⁴ worked more than Colbert. He encouraged¹⁸ agriculture, industry, commerce. He reorganized¹⁹ the finances, and he gave¹⁸ to Louis XIV.

¹ imperfect subjunctive. ² place after word modified. ³ say 'to it.'
⁴ omit this word. ⁵ turn: 'of an ambition boundless.' ⁶ past definite.
⁷ imperfect. ⁸ *répondit-il.* ⁹ *à.* ¹⁰ *de.* ¹¹ on what . . . death; *sur ce qu'il y avait à faire après lui.* ¹² imperfect of *devoir.* ¹³ *de ne pas.*
¹⁴ past indefinite of *vouloir.* ¹⁵ he gave . . . greatness; *il a donné à la France cette grandeur.* ¹⁶ pluperfect. ¹⁷ *jusqu'à ce.* ¹⁸ past indefinite.
¹⁹ he reorganized; *il a mis un ordre parfait dans.*

the money necessary for the enormous expenses of that prince, in times of peace and war.¹

He used to rise² before daylight,³ and he worked sixteen hours a⁴ day. He was not fond of intruders and
5 was called⁵ "the man of marble." Solicitors were afraid of his thick⁶ eyebrows,⁷ of his wrinkled⁶ forehead, and of his hard, deep-set eyes.⁸

One day, a lady came⁹ to ask him a favor. As he did not answer,¹⁰ she insisted, and finally went down on her knees¹¹
10 and said to him: "My lord, I¹² entreat you, listen to me." Then, Colbert went down on his knees before her and said:¹³ "Madame, I entreat you, let me alone!¹⁴" It was¹⁵ thus that he used to get rid² of those who made¹³ him lose his time.

11. DEATH OF LOUIS XVI.

After five months of captivity in the tower of the Temple,
15 the king appeared¹⁶ before the Convention. He defended¹⁷ himself with firmness, and received with the resignation of a Christian the news⁷ of his condemnation. On¹⁸ the 20th of January, 1793, Louis XVI. obtained the permission to see his family for the last time.¹⁹ The final⁶ interview took place

¹ of that . . . war; *que fit ce prince aussi bien dans la paix que dans la guerre.* ² explain the use of the imperfect in this and following verbs. ³ *le jour.* ⁴ *par.* ⁵ put in the active voice. ⁶ place after the word modified. ⁷ use the singular form. ⁸ turn: 'of his eye profound and hard' (*dur*). ⁹ tell why the use of the past definite should be resumed here. ¹⁰ use imperfect. ¹¹ and finally . . . knees; *puis, finit par se mettre à genoux devant lui.* ¹² insert *en.* ¹³ this verb must be preceded by *lui.* ¹⁴ *laissez-moi tranquille.* ¹⁵ *c'est.* ¹⁶ *comparut.* ¹⁷ observe that this selection recounts a series of historical facts conceived of as beginning, developing, and reaching completion at a definite moment of the past; hence, every predicate verb should be in the past definite. ¹⁸ in dates, do not translate the prepositions; use the cardinal form of the adjective—usually, simply the figure; do not use capitals for names of months. ¹⁹ turn: 'to (*de*) see a last time his family.'

in the dining room of the prison. The queen entered first,¹ holding her son by the hand; then, came Madame Elizabeth, sister of the king, and the royal² princess, daughter of Louis XVI. They fell into³ the arms of the king.

For almost⁴ two hours, they remained closely clasping⁵ one another.⁵ The separation was heart-rending, but the king preserved all his fortitude.⁶

He rested⁷ quietly during the night. At five o'clock in⁸ the morning, his valet Cléry awoke him. Louis XVI. made his last preparations;⁹ he heard mass and took com-¹⁰ munion. At nine o'clock, the soldiers came to get him. "Let us go,"¹⁰ said the king. During the journey and on the scaffold, he kept up the noblest attitude.¹¹ The executioner bound his¹² hands. Turning toward the people, he tried¹³ to pronounce a few words; but a rolling of drums¹⁴¹⁵ drowned his voice, and a few minutes¹⁵ after, his head dropped into the basket. Thus perished a king who was good, virtuous, but too weak, alas! to resist the fury of the Revolution.

12. NAPOLEON BONAPARTE.

Napoleon Bonaparte was born at Ajaccio, on¹⁶ the 15th²⁰ of August, 1769. His father, Charles Bonaparte, had¹⁷ five sons and three daughters. Napoleon was the second in¹⁸ the

¹ *la première.* ² place after word modified. ³ they fell into; *ils se précipitèrent dans.* ⁴ almost: *près de.* ⁵ remained . . . another; *demeurèrent étroitement serrés les uns contre les autres.* ⁶ preserved . . . fortitude; *garda toute sa fermeté.* ⁷ *reposer.* ⁸ *de.* ⁹ *préparatif, m.* ¹⁰ *partir.* ¹¹ turn: 'he kept up (*garder*) during the journey (*trajet, m.*) and on the scaffold the noblest attitude.' ¹² turn: 'to him bound the.' ¹³ *vouloir.* ¹⁴ use singular. ¹⁵ *instant, m.* ¹⁶ see page 100, footnote 18. ¹⁷ remember that, in a narrative, all parts which are purely accessory, — such as the description of a previously existing state or condition, the description of a locality, or explanations interpolated here and there, — must be expressed by the imperfect.

family. At ten,¹ he entered² the military³ school of Brienne, where his masters were² struck by⁴ his extraordinary⁴ intelligence. At fifteen,¹ he was² sent to the military³ school of Paris. At sixteen,¹ he was⁶ second lieutenant in a regiment of artillery. He rapidly⁸ became captain, then commander, and he had⁸ this rank, when he was sent to the army which was besieging Toulon, of which the English had taken possession in 1793. Thanks to him, Toulon was taken in a few days, and he was made general. He was⁵ then twenty-four years old.

When Bonaparte took⁶ command of the Army of Italy in 1796, he was twenty-six. Illustrious³ generals like Augereau and Masséna served⁵ under his orders. He explained⁷ to them his plans for the⁸ campaign, and on⁹ hearing him, Masséna said to Augereau: "We have found our master."

In⁹ less than⁴ a year,—from the month of April, 1796, to the month of February, 1797,—the Army of Italy, which was⁵ very poorly equipped, and which was lacking in almost all the necessities,¹⁰ carried off twelve great victories. With 55,000 soldiers, Bonaparte triumphed over⁴ more than⁴ 200,000 enemies, killed¹¹ more than 20,000, took¹¹ more than 80,000, and returned¹² to⁹ France¹³ the greatest general of the Republic.

13. MARRIAGE OF NAPOLEON WITH MARIE-LOUISE.

Even after all his victories, Napoleon was considered by the kings of Europe a parvenu.¹⁴ The¹⁵ son of a poor¹⁶

¹ add *ans*. ² remember that the real canvass of the narrative—namely, all parts essential to it—must be related in the past definite; *entrer* here governs *à*. ³ place after the word modified. ⁴ *de*. ⁵ see page 101, footnote 17. ⁶ insert *le*. ⁷ *exposer*. ⁸ for the; *de*. ⁹ *en*. ¹⁰ in almost . . . necessities; *de presque toutes les choses nécessaires*. ¹¹ this verb must be preceded by *en*. ¹² *revenir*. ¹³ add *avec la réputation du*. ¹⁴ turn: 'Napoleon, even after . . . was considered (*imperfect*) by . . . as . . .'
¹⁵ omit this word. ¹⁶ *petit*.

Corsican¹ lawyer, he owed² his crown only to³ himself; the other kings and emperors had received theirs from a long line⁴ of ancestors, and although afraid⁵ of him, they considered² him as greatly⁶ beneath them.

Napoleon had⁷ the weakness of wishing to enter the⁸ 5 family of kings. While he was a general, he had married Josephine, widow of General Beauharnais;⁹ and Josephine, after becoming¹⁰ empress, was² very popular in France. As she had not given him any children, he left⁷ her by a divorce, — for the law permitted² divorce in France, — and 10 he resolved⁷ to marry a princess.

Napoleon thought¹¹ at first of a sister of the Emperor of Russia, Alexander, but she was refused him.¹² He then¹ turned toward Austria and forced the Emperor, Francis II., to give him his daughter, Marie-Louise. The latter was 15 regarded⁷ by her parents, and she regarded herself, as a victim.

She abandoned her husband as soon as he was vanquished in 1814, and took refuge at Vienna, taking with her¹³ the Emperor's son, who was called¹⁴ the "King of 20 Rome." After the death of Napoleon, she married an Austrian¹ colonel. As to her son, he lived⁷ at the court of Austria, where he bore² the title of Duke of Reichstadt. His thought was² unceasingly turned toward France. He died in 1832, and the remains of this unhappy youth repose 25 to-day near¹⁵ those of the princes of the house of Austria.

¹ place after the word modified. ² see page 101, footnote 17. ³ *ne . . . qu'à.* ⁴ *suite*, f. ⁵ although afraid; *tout en ayant peur.* ⁶ *fort.* ⁷ see page 102, footnote 2. ⁸ *dans une.* ⁹ turn: 'he had married (*épouser*) while he was general, Josephine, widow of the . . .'¹⁰ after becoming; *devenue.* ¹¹ *songer* (*à*). ¹² *lui.* ¹³ taking with her; *emporter.* ¹⁴ use the active voice. ¹⁵ *auprès de.*

MORE ADVANCED PROSE COM- POSITION.

1. LES PRÉCIEUSES RIDICULES.

(COMEDY BY ¹ MOLIÈRE.)

The daughter and niece of a good bourgeois, named M. Gorgibus, are two pedantic maidens² who dream of seeing themselves surrounded by wits, people in³ the fashion, who talk only⁴ in a pretentious style; they have changed
5 their names of Madelon and⁵ Cathos for the more euphonious names of Aminte and⁵ Polixène, and they pose as⁶ *précieuses*. Gorgibus who, above⁷ all, is a man of practical common⁸ sense, wishes to marry⁹ these two young girls to¹⁰ two young men of good family, named La Grange and
10 Du Croisy. These young men express themselves with simplicity and naturalness, a fact which does not commend them to¹¹ Cathos and⁵ Madelon, who dismiss¹² them with contempt. The two noblemen swear to avenge themselves, and send to the girls,¹³ to this effect, two impudent valets,
15 who give themselves out¹⁴ for men of quality.

¹ *de*. ² pedantic maidens; *deux pédantes*. ³ *à . . .* ⁴ *ne . . . que*.
⁵ repeat preposition. ⁶ *en*. ⁷ *avant*. ⁸ practical, common: *gros bon*.
⁹ *marier*; this is the only proper verb to use when the English verb has the sense of giving in marriage, or of performing the religious or civil ceremony of marriage. ¹⁰ *avec*. ¹¹ a fact . . . them to; *ce qui ne les recommande pas auprès de*. ¹² *éconduisent*. ¹³ to the girls; *chez elles*. ¹⁴ omit this word.

Our two simpletons take the extravagances of the Marquis de Mascarille and¹ the Vicomte de Jodelet for the perfection of wit and¹ gallantry. All at once, the masters arrive, with² stick in³ hand, to seek their servants. They do not fail to banter the coquettes on the choice of their admirers, and leave them confounded and overwhelmed with shame. Gorgibus advises⁴ them a little harshly to profit by the lesson, and they disappear under the crushing⁵ apostrophe: "Go hide yourselves, wretches,⁶ go hide yourselves!"

2. AN ADVENTURE OF RABELAIS.

(QUART D'HEURE DE RABELAIS.)

The Cardinal du Bellay, having been sent as ambassador 10 to Rome by Francis I., took Rabelais along, in the capacity of⁷ doctor. The latter showed very little respect for⁸ the Pope, and conducted himself in such a way that he was obliged to leave Rome in haste, and to escape to France on foot, poorly clad and without money. After⁹ numerous 15 days of march, he at last arrived at Lyons. But to continue his journey to Paris with less fatigue,¹⁰ he bethought himself of a funny¹¹ stratagem which would have been very dangerous for a man less celebrated.¹²

He entered a tavern, and asked for a good room. He 20 begged his¹³ hostess to send him a young boy who could¹⁴ read and write. As soon as he was alone,¹⁵ he made several little packages filled with¹⁶ ashes. The young boy arrives, with paper, pen,¹⁷ and ink. Rabelais dictates several notes to him. On one, were written¹⁸ these words, "Poison to 25

¹ repeat preposition. ² omit, and replace by *le*. ³ *à la*. ⁴ *engager* (*à*). ⁵ under the crushing; *devant cette foudroyante*. ⁶ *vilaines*.

⁷ in the capacity of; *en qualité de*. ⁸ *à*. ⁹ insert *de*. ¹⁰ turn: 'his journey with less fatigue to (*jusqu'à*) Paris.' ¹¹ *plaisant*. ¹² *connu*. ¹³ use definite article. ¹⁴ who could; *sachant*. ¹⁵ as soon . . . alone; *une fois seul*. ¹⁶ filled with; *de*. ¹⁷ *une plume*. ¹⁸ *sur l'un, on lisait*.

kill¹ the king ;” on another, “Poison to kill the queen ;” on a² third, “Poison to kill the dauphin.” A similar label is prepared for each one of the children of France. Rabelais sticks one of these labels on each of the packages,³ and
 5 says to the boy : “My child, take care not to⁴ speak of this to your mother or⁵ any one, for it would endanger⁶ your life and mine.” He then shut up the whole in his valise, and called for⁷ dinner. The boy ran at once to relate every-
 thing⁸ to his mother. The latter, trembling with fear,⁹ has-
 10 tened to go to inform the provost of the city. The provost repairs at once to the tavern ; and, after a careful search of¹⁰ the room of the traveller, takes possession of him and his valise. The bad appearance¹¹ of Rabelais, his evasive answers during the examination¹² which he had to undergo,
 15 brought¹³ upon him grave suspicions. He repeated¹⁴ without ceasing : “Take good care of¹⁵ my valise, and conduct me to¹⁶ the king ; I have strange things to reveal to him.”¹⁷ His hands were tied,¹⁸ he was put¹⁹ upon a good horse, and taken¹⁸ to Paris. He lived well¹⁹ all the way without having
 20 to spend a cent, and upon²⁰ his arrival in the capital, he was arraigned before the king.

Francis I. knew¹⁴ him well. He asked him where he had left Monsieur le cardinal du Bellay. Rabelais then related²¹ his story. His valise was²¹ opened ; in the²² presence of all,
 25 he swallowed²¹ a little of the contents of all the packages, and proved²¹ thus that they were¹⁴ entirely harmless. The

¹ *faire mourir*. ² use definite article. ³ turn: ‘on each pack-
 age one of the labels.’ ⁴ *gardez-vous bien de*. ⁵ *ni*. ⁶ it would
 endanger; *il y va de*. ⁷ *demanda à*. ⁸ turn: ‘ran everything to
 relate . . .’ ⁹ *transie de peur*. ¹⁰ *une perquisition minutieuse dans*.
¹¹ *mine*, f. ¹² *dans l’interrogatoire*. ¹³ *furent peser*. ¹⁴ imperfect.
¹⁵ *prenez bien garde à*. ¹⁶ *vers*. ¹⁷ turn: ‘I have to (à) reveal (*ré-
 véler*) to him things strange.’ ¹⁸ use the active voice. ¹⁹ insert *pendant*.
²⁰ *dès*. ²¹ present. ²² in the; *en*.

court laughed heartily at the ingenious scheme¹ which he had imagined to finish his long journey on horseback,² without untying the strings of his purse.³

This adventure gave rise⁴ to the expression, "*le mauvais quart d'heure de Rabelais*," that is to say, the moment⁵ when⁶ one must pay his bill,⁶—a big bill, especially.

3. THE STORY OF JACQUES AMYOT.

Jacques Amyot was born at Melun, on the third of October, 1513. His father was a haberdasher, but he had great trouble in supporting⁷ his family, which consisted of a boy, Jacques, and two daughters. These, being older,⁸ occupied¹⁰ themselves with the affairs of the shop; as for Jacques, he had no taste for commerce; to procure⁹ books and¹⁰ devour them in secret, such was his only ambition. His mother, of whom he was the favorite, had put him at school, where he¹¹ quickly learned to read. His father called him lazy,¹² ¹⁵ when he found him with¹³ a book in his hand.

One day, Jacques resolved to go to Paris. He was hardly thirteen years old, when he left his parents without even saying good-by to them; and without money, poorly clad, wearing coarse¹⁴ shoes, he took in midwinter the road which led ²⁰ from Melun to Orleans.

It took several days at this time¹⁵ to go from Melun to Paris; but the poor child, unaware of this¹⁶ distance, had

¹ heartily . . . scheme; *beaucoup du moyen ingénieux*. ² turn: 'to finish on horseback his . . . ' ³ without . . . purse; *sans bourse délier*. ⁴ gave rise; *a donné naissance*. ⁵ où. ⁶ écot, m. ⁷ great trouble in supporting; *beaucoup de peine à nourrir*. ⁸ being older; *les aînées*. ⁹ use the reflexive form. ¹⁰ replace by *pour*. ¹¹ where he; *et il y*. ¹² called him lazy; *le traitait de grand paresseux*. ¹³ omit this word. ¹⁴ wearing coarse; *chaussé de gros*. ¹⁵ époque, f. ¹⁶ unaware of this; *très ignorant de la*.

imagined that he could¹ arrive there the same evening. After having walked until night without having met² any one of³ whom to ask his road, he thought⁴ that he had lost his way, for he had not yet perceived the steeple of the
 5 Cathedral of Orleans. Benumbed with cold, worn out with hunger and fatigue, he lay down near a bush, unable to see⁵ his road through the snow which was beginning to fall.

Happily, a horseman passed by⁶ and heard his groans. One of his servants took the child up behind him,⁷ and a
 10 few drops of cordial quickly revived him. Little Jacques⁸ then related his escapade; but, when they⁹ arrived at Orleans, he was seized with high fever¹⁰ and had lost consciousness.

The nobleman who had picked him up on the road, took
 15 him to the hospital of that city, and intrusted him to the care¹¹ of the sisters, whose charity he knew well.¹² The next day, he came to see him, gave him a letter of recommendation to¹³ a master in¹⁴ one of the numerous colleges of Paris, and went away promising¹⁵ him to go that very
 20 evening¹⁶ to reassure his mother at Melun, where he was to return.

Three days of rest completely cured little Jacques,⁸ and he was able to resume his journey.¹⁷ He received twelve cents and some provisions before leaving¹⁸ the hospital, so
 25 that he could gayly finish the rest of his journey.¹⁹ On¹⁵

¹ conditional present. ² infinitive present. ³ à. ⁴ past definite.
⁵ unable to see; *ne reconnaissant plus*. ⁶ *près de là*. ⁷ up behind him; *en croupe*. ⁸ proper nouns preceded by adjectives, require the definite article. ⁹ *on*. ¹⁰ *était pris d'une grosse fièvre*. ¹¹ use plural.
¹² *dont il connaissait la charité*. ¹³ *pour*. ¹⁴ *de*. ¹⁵ the present participle should be preceded by *en* when the action which it represents, and that expressed by the governing verb, are supposed to take place simultaneously. ¹⁶ *le soir même*. ¹⁷ to resume his journey; *se remettre en route*.
¹⁸ before leaving; *avant sa sortie de*. ¹⁹ he could . . . his journey; *qu'il fit gaiement le reste du chemin*.

leaving the hospital, he swore that if ever he became rich, he would endow this establishment.

In the letter which he had given to Jacques, the kind nobleman asked that his protégé be employed as¹ errand boy and servant of the professors and pupils. If he showed
5 any striking disposition² for study, he was to be received³ later within⁴ the school.

The master to whom Jacques handed this letter, was a man full of business⁵ and naturally gruff. "Choose⁶ your⁶ place at the door," he said to him, "and we shall see about
10 giving you⁷ errands." Then, with⁸ a brusque gesture, he dismissed him. But Jacques was of a resolute and persistent nature which nothing could discourage.⁹ The child chose¹⁰ a place in a doorway and carried there a big bunch of straw; he settled down comfortably, and supped gayly
15 on⁸ the remains of the provisions which the sisters of Orleans had given him.

The next day, on their way to school,¹¹ the pupils saw the little errand boy, seated, his¹² legs hanging over¹³ the fresh straw, reading in a book of the¹² Gospels; his pretty
20 face¹⁴ charmed them. Several of¹⁵ them questioned him, and having learned that he was an¹⁹ errand boy, employed him immediately; thus, he earned some few cents from the very first day.¹⁶

Immediately upon¹⁷ his arrival at Paris, Jacques had 25

¹ asked that . . . employed as; *demandait qu'on employât . . . en qualité de*. ² use plural. ³ *on devait le recevoir*. ⁴ within; *à l'intérieur de*. ⁵ full of business; *affairé*. ⁶ use singular. ⁷ about giving you; *à te faire faire*. ⁸ *de*. ⁹ which . . . discourage; *qui ne se décourageait point*. ¹⁰ use the reflexive form. ¹¹ on their . . . school; *en se rendant aux classes*. ¹² omit this word. ¹³ *sur*. ¹⁴ *bonne mine*. ¹⁵ *d'entre*. ¹⁶ turn: 'he earned thus, from the very (*dès le*) first day, some few cents (*quelque menue monnaie*). ¹⁷ *dès*; this preposition, which is sometimes synonymous with *à partir de*, marks a point of departure in time.

- written to his mother; he soon received word from her that she was sending him a big loaf of bread by¹ the boat from Melun. Every week, she would send him another like it,² to prevent him from dying of hunger in the great city.
- 5 He wondered³ what he could⁴ do to prove, some⁵ day, his gratitude to this tender mother. To cross the threshold of the college, be admitted into it as a⁶ pupil, and become a scholar, this was, it seemed to him,⁸ the surest means;⁷ but how was⁸ he⁸ to reach this goal?
- 10 One day, after a holiday, a lady passed by,⁸ taking her two sons back to the college. "At your service, ladies⁷ and gentlemen," said little Jacques to them. "Why,⁹ it is our little errand boy," said one of the pupils to his brother. "We must recommend him to mamma; she will give him
- 15 more to do¹⁰ than we." Their mother looked at Jacques and was charmed by his face and his childish grace.¹¹ Having seen the book which he held in his hand, she questioned him, and learned of⁸ his passionate ardor for reading and learning. "Do you⁷ wish⁷ to accompany my
- 20 sons to college every day?"¹² she asked him kindly. "At my request, the professors will permit you to attend all their lessons, and thus¹² you will be able to learn something."

The child, not knowing how to prove his gratitude to

25 the good lady, knelt down before her and kissed¹³ the hem¹⁴ of her gown.

¹ turn: 'he received soon from her word (*l'avis*) that a big loaf was arriving to him by . . . ' ² would send . . . like it; *elle devait lui en envoyer un semblable*. ³ *rêvai*: (*à*). ⁴ conditional present. ⁵ *un*. ⁶ *c'était, lui semblait-il*. ⁷ use singular. ⁸ omit this word. ⁹ *tiens*. ¹⁰ *elle lui fera gagner plus*. ¹¹ childish grace; *gentillesse*, f. ¹² in French, an adverb or adverbial expression is usually placed immediately after the verb, even when the verb has an object; observe that the reverse is true of English construction. ¹³ and kissed; *en baisant*. ¹⁴ use plural.

He was soon admitted within¹ the college; he had² a little room under the roof, and he was authorized³ to share the studies of the pupils. His life, from this time on,⁴ became a combat full of ardor.

The big loaf which he received each week from Melun,⁴ 5 assured his subsistence; he could² add to this⁵ some fruits and vegetables, and buy⁶ a coat with the small wages which the kind lady had procured him;⁷ he could² also⁴ buy⁶ some books! He then⁴ resolved⁸ to surpass all his fellow-students in his studies. 10

After rapid progress in the study of Latin, he wished⁹ to learn the⁹ beautiful Greek language, which only¹⁰ a few scholars then⁴ knew in France. By dint of work, he succeeded² in learning Greek. The king, Francis I., had instituted a chair for the teaching of this language. One day, 15 Jacques was³ examined by his professors in the¹¹ presence of Francis I. and his sister, Marguerite de Navarre, who¹² also knew Greek. The king and princess, astounded at his learning, overwhelmed him with praises, and took² under their protection the⁹ young scholar, who¹¹ was¹¹ to¹¹ be¹¹ one 20 of the future glories of France.

A few days after, the boat from Melun landed² at Paris a poor man and his wife clad in the humble garments of the artisans of that time; they were the father and mother of Jacques Amyot. "Oh, my dear son!" said the happy 25 woman to him, pressing¹³ him tenderly upon her heart, "I have brought¹⁴ thee thy father, who has forgiven thee and¹⁵ is very proud of thee."

¹ à l'intérieur du. ² past definite. ³ use active voice. ⁴ see page 110, footnote 12. ⁵ add to this; *y ajouter*. ⁶ use the reflexive form. ⁷ turn: 'which to him had procured (*assurés*) the kind lady.' ⁸ *songea* (*à*). ⁹ use demonstrative adjective. ¹⁰ *qu'à peine*. ¹¹ omit this word. ¹² insert *elle* (for emphasis). ¹³ see page 108, footnote 15. ¹⁴ present tense. ¹⁵ repeat subject.

Amyot was ordained priest, then appointed professor of Greek ; later, he became tutor to¹ the children of Henry II. and finally, Bishop of Auxerre. He left in² his testament a legacy to the hospital of Orleans, as he had promised to do³ in his childhood.

We⁴ owe him a complete translation of the works of Plutarch. The language of Amyot is rich,⁵ clear, eminently French. His vocabulary, like his syntax, is drawn from the very traditions⁶ of the French language ; his expressions
10 are lively, picturesque, full of grace and brilliancy.⁷ He is at the same time⁸ familiar and *naïf*. The success of this work was⁹ rapid and permanent. Until his death, Amyot saw⁹ each year marked by a new edition. In¹⁰ the seventeenth century, the French Academy counted⁹ him among
15 the models of the language, and his place has remained by the side of Montaigne and Rabelais, among the greatest prose writers of France.

4. JEAN-BAPTISTE LULLI.

(CREATOR OF THE OPERA IN FRANCE.)

In 1643, the Chevalier de Guise was travelling in Italy. He was preparing¹¹ to return to France, when he received
20 a letter from Mademoiselle, duchesse de Montpensier,¹² in² which she¹³ begged¹⁴ him to select¹⁵ a bright child of ten or¹⁰ twelve, of whom she might¹⁶ make a¹⁷ jester. After many inquiries, the chevalier decided¹¹ upon¹⁸ a little Florentine

¹ *de*. ² *par*. ³ as he . . . to do; *ainsi qu'il en avait pris l'engagement*. ⁴ *on*. ⁵ *abondante*. ⁶ singular. ⁷ *fraîcheur*. ⁸ at the same time; *en même temps*. ⁹ past definite. ¹⁰ *à*. ¹¹ reflexive form. ¹² turn: 'received from Mademoiselle, duchesse de Montpensier, a letter . . .'. ¹³ *celle-ci*. ¹⁴ imperfect. ¹⁵ this verb must be preceded by *lui*. ¹⁶ imperfect of *vouloir*. ¹⁷ *son*. ¹⁸ *pour*.

lad,¹ possessed¹ of a lively imagination and of such² singular ugliness that his face, at first sight, provoked³ laughter. This child was Jean-Baptiste Lulli. His parents were very poor, but his father was a¹ rather good musician, and Lulli had learned so early to play on the violin that, at the age of 5 ten, he was already a remarkable performer.⁴ His father and mother consented gladly to a separation that was to make the fortune of their son; and soon after, the chevalier arrived in France with the future jester of Mademoiselle. The peculiar physiognomy of Lulli did not find favor with⁵ 10 the capricious princess. Instead of admitting him to the number of her pages, she made him one of her⁶ scullions. He soon became the favorite of the numerous valets of the house. During the day, he diverted them by his ingenious wit,⁷ and in¹ the evening, he played for⁸ them the prettiest 15 national⁹ airs of Naples and Florence. He played already with a wonderful precision, and an originality of execution that was¹⁰ very extraordinary for a child of his age.

The Comte de Nogent, coming one day to pay a visit to the Duchesse de Montpensier,¹¹ heard the little virtuoso giving¹² his habitual⁹ concert to the valets of Mademoiselle, on⁸ the lower⁹ story, in the servants' hall.¹³ The count stopped a moment to listen to the violinist; then, attracted by the talent¹⁴ of the performer, the great lord, attired as he was for a ceremonial visit,¹⁵ did not disdain to descend to¹⁶ the 25 servants' hall, where Lulli was doing wonders¹⁷ on his violin.

¹ omit this word. ² of such; *d'une si*. ³ that his . . . provoked; *qu'elle suffisait à première vue pour provoquer*. ⁴ *un instrumentiste assez remarquable*. ⁵ did not . . . with; *ne put trouver grâce près de*. ⁶ she made him one of her; *elle le fit descendre au rang de ses*. ⁷ *ses naïves saillies*. ⁸ à. ⁹ place after the noun. ¹⁰ omit 'that was' and 'a child of.' ¹¹ coming . . . to the Duchesse de M.; *qui venait un jour en visite chez la duchesse de M.* ¹² *qui donnait*. ¹³ in the servants' hall; *où se trouvait l'office*. ¹⁴ *mérite*, m. ¹⁵ *tout paré qu'il était pour une visite d'étiquette*. ¹⁶ *jusqu'à*. ¹⁷ singular.

The unexpected visit of the count to¹ the Duchesse de Montpensier, changed suddenly the fortunes² of Lulli. The noble visitor spoke in such glowing terms to Mademoiselle of the³ scullion violinist that she desired⁴ to hear him. As
 5 he had descended from the drawing-room to the kitchen, so⁵ now⁵ he reascended from the kitchen to⁶ the drawing-room. A caprice had condemned him to an obscure position, his precocious talent brought him out of it.⁷ He had been reduced to having for audience only⁸ the valets of the
 10 house, yet⁸ he deserved⁹ to be appreciated by the most brilliant assembly.

The Duchesse de Montpensier gave⁹ a concert, which was⁹ the occasion of a veritable triumph for Lulli.

The king organized¹⁰ for him the company¹¹ of the
 15 *petits violons de la chambre*; and this company,¹¹ of whom Lulli was the leader, acquired¹² a European reputation.

Here ends the childhood of Lulli. His skill¹³ as a⁵ performer had drawn him from obscurity, his genius as a⁵ composer has rendered him forever celebrated. He is justly
 20 regarded¹⁴ as the real creator of the opera in France. He was⁹ overwhelmed with glory and riches. The king conferred nobility upon him;¹⁵ and Molière, who was a judge of wits, greatly enjoyed the original conversation of¹⁶ Lulli, who was⁹ one of his intimate friends.

¹ *chez*. ² singular. ³ spoke in . . . of; *fit à Mademoiselle un si grand éloge du*. ⁴ *celle-ci voulut*. ⁵ omit this word. ⁶ *dans*. ⁷ brought him out of it; *l'en fit sortir*. ⁸ *on l'avait réduit à n'avoir pour auditeurs que*. ⁹ past definite. ¹⁰ *créa*. ¹¹ *troupe*, f. ¹² *eut*. ¹³ *savoir*, m. ¹⁴ *on le regarde avec justice*. ¹⁵ conferred . . . him; *l'anoblit*. ¹⁶ was a judge . . . conversation; *qui se connaissait en hommes d'esprit, faisait le plus grand cas des saillies originales de*.

5. LA MARE-AU-DIABLE.

(BY GEORGE SAND.)

La Mare-au-Diable is a little masterpiece, destined to live¹ as long as the French language.

Germain, the handsome ploughman,² a widower with three children, at the age of twenty-eight, must marry again for reasons of necessity.³ "Père Maurice," his father-in-law,⁴ advises this⁴ by all kinds of sensible and practical⁵ words, and Germain, who still mourns his first wife, consents although with⁶ regret. "Père Maurice" has already some one in view; it is a rather rich widow,³ who lives⁷ some leagues from there, and who is said to be⁸ a good match. As it is not a question of a love marriage, but of an arrangement between mature and serious persons, one interview, according to "Père Maurice," will suffice to decide everything.⁹ "To-morrow is Saturday," he says to Germain; "you¹⁰ will start about two o'clock in¹¹ the afternoon, you¹⁰ will be down there by⁷ night; the moon is full just now,¹² the roads are good, and it is a ride of only three leagues."¹³

All the interest and action of the novel centre in this journey. At first, Germain² was to take the trip alone, mounted on his good mare, "la Grise." But an old neighbor, "la Guillette," profits by¹¹ the occasion to intrust to Germain her daughter, "la petite Marie," who has just been hired¹⁴ as a shepherdess quite near the place where Germain is going.² Marie seems only a child, yet she is almost sixteen.¹⁵ She mounts behind¹⁶ on "la Grise,"

¹ *qui vivra.* ² reverse the order, thus: 'the handsome ploughman, Germain.' ³ *par nécessité, par raison.* ⁴ *l'y engage.* ⁵ *positives.* ⁶ *s'y rend, bien qu'à.* ⁷ *à.* ⁸ use the active voice, thus: 'that one says to be.' ⁹ *pour tout éclaircir.* ¹⁰ use singular form. ¹¹ *de.* ¹² *grande dans ce moment-ci.* ¹³ it is . . . leagues; *il n'y a pas plus de trois lieues de pays.* ¹⁴ *qui vient de s'engager.* ¹⁵ *va sur ses seize ans.* ¹⁶ behind; *en croupe.*

and both start off,¹ Germain dreaming of his dead wife² more than of his future one,¹ and Marie weeping at³ leaving her mother and home.⁴

After the first moments of silence, Germain⁵ begins to chat
5 with "petite Marie." She knows the⁶ motive of his journey. He speaks to her of his children, of Pierre who ran away⁷ angry,⁷ because his father would not take him along.

But suddenly, the mare shies. She has seen something in the ditch. It is Pierre, who has gone ahead, and who, while
10 waiting for his father to pass,⁸ has fallen asleep. Germain scolds, the little fellow¹ coaxes his father and implores him to take him along. "Petite Marie" arranges everything, thinks of everything. "La Grise" is strong⁹ and can very well carry three persons, two of whom⁵ weigh so little.
15 Pierre shall ride in front and Marie¹⁰ behind. One feels that this simple child bears within her all the qualities of nature that make of the thoughtful woman¹¹ the providence of the home.

Meanwhile, little incidents come up. "Petit Pierre" is
20 hungry; they must¹² stop and take a light repast. Peasants do not eat quickly; they¹³ lose an hour, it is growing late, and they still have the great woods to cross.¹⁴ A dense fog rises with the night. They¹³ miss the road and they¹³ are in the heart of the forest. They¹³ roam around the awful¹⁵
25 Devil's Pool (it is thus that the country people call it⁵) and, after many efforts to¹⁶ get away from it, they¹³ are always led

¹ omit this word. ² dead wife; *défunte*, f. ³ *de*. ⁴ *le pays*. ⁵ reverse the order. ⁶ *est au fait du*. ⁷ angry; *en boudant*. ⁸ while . . . to pass; *en attendant son père au passage*. ⁹ *solide*. ¹⁰ shall ride in front and Marie; *sera devant, comme Marie est* . . . ¹¹ which make . . . woman; *qui font que la femme prudente est*. ¹² *falloir*, followed by the infinitive. ¹³ *on*. ¹⁴ it is growing . . . to cross; *on est en retard, et il reste encore à traverser les grands bois*. ¹⁵ *cette maudite*. ¹⁶ *maint effort pour*.

back to it as by a spell. They decide to¹ stop and camp. Here, in two chapters entitled "Under the Great Oaks" and "Evening Prayer," we² have a series of exquisite and delicate scenes, which have not their equal nor³ their model in any idyl, classic or modern.

Germain, like all men, even the most robust and valiant, is impatient by⁴ nature; "petite Marie," like all women, when they are good, is patience itself.⁵ She makes a bed for the child, lights a⁶ fire with dried branches, and opposes her⁷ good humor to bad luck. Germain, in the⁸ presence 10 of this merit which he had never suspected, ponders.⁹ His ideas begin to take a certain turn. "What!" he says to himself, "I am going very far to look for a woman whom I do not know, who is said to be rich, who is proud without doubt, who will think that she does¹⁰ me a⁸ great honor by 15 marrying me, with my three children; and here¹¹ I have close to me a child, simple, poor, but rich in⁴ the gifts of God, in⁴ natural qualities and virtues, and who would be a treasure in my house and in my heart."

Meanwhile, nature speaks; Germain is hungry. They² 20 detach a partridge from a certain present of game which he was carrying to his intended. It is again Marie who superintends¹² this improvised feast. "'Petite Marie,' the man who marries¹³ thee will be no¹⁴ fool!" Such is the idea which is born irresistibly in the mind of Germain, on seeing 25 her so discreet, so industrious. Marie continues to occupy

¹ on prend le parti de. ² on. ³ n'ont leur pendant ni. ⁴ de. ⁵ même. ⁶ du. ⁷ la. ⁸ omit this word. ⁹ s'étonner. ¹⁰ the object of croire, penser, and their synonyms, is often an infinitive, while the object of these verbs in English is usually expressed by the full clause; thus: 'will think that she does me' is translated croire me faire. ¹¹ voilà que. ¹² qui est l'intendante de. ¹³ use the future of épouser; this verb is the one commonly used to translate 'marry' as a transitive verb; 'to marry,' in the sense of 'to get married,' is translated by se marier. ¹⁴ ne sera pas un.

herself with "petit Pierre;" she calms his fears,¹ she amuses him, and Germain cannot help remarking: "There is no one like thee to² talk to children." The child says³ his prayer, which Marie prompts him word by word;⁴ his eyes close already. But his ideas become confused, and, vaguely mixing all that he has seen and heard during the evening, he says: "Father, if you⁵ want to give me another mother, I want it to be⁶ 'petite Marie'!" The little angel of innocence expresses thus the idea which has been only vague and floating until now in the mind of Germain. From that moment, he perceives that "petite Marie," of whom he had never thought as beautiful,⁷ is sweeter⁸ than a wild rose, and he goes over every detail of the⁹ graceful portrait, concluding thus:¹⁰ "She is¹¹ cheerful, she is¹¹ good,¹¹ industrious,¹¹ loving, and¹¹ clever.¹² I do not see what one could wish for¹³ better."

As soon as the day dawns,¹⁴ Germain proposes to Marie to continue¹⁵ their journey. The young girl then offers¹⁶ to conduct his child to the farm, in order to wash his pretty face and clean his clothes, before presenting him to his new mother. The latter is already provided with¹³ three suitors. Her vanity and coquetry completely disgust¹⁷ Germain with¹⁸ a marriage which has never pleased him. He withdraws from the ranks of her lovers, and goes to the farm to get his boy. There¹⁸ he learns, to his great surprise, that the young girl and Pierre have already gone away. "Petite Marie," on

¹ *le rassure dans ses terreurs.* ² *pour.* ³ *fait.* ⁴ which . . . by word; *que lui souffle mot à mot la petite Marie.* ⁵ use singular form. ⁶ *je veux que ce soit la.* ⁷ as beautiful; *pour sa beauté.* ⁸ *plus fraîche.* ⁹ goes over . . . of the; *il se détaille le.* ¹⁰ concluding thus; *en concluant.* ¹¹ *C'est; elle* would be the usual subject, but *ce, cela,* or even *ça,* is also used, though rarely, in speaking familiarly of children or young people; all adjectives here agree in the masculine. ¹² *drôle.* ¹³ *de.* ¹⁴ as soon . . . dawns; *quand le jour est venu.* ¹⁵ *achever.* ¹⁶ this verb must be preceded by *lui.* ¹⁷ *achèvent de dégoûter.* ¹⁸ *arrivé là.*

arriving at the house of the farmer who had hired her as a shepherdess, had run¹ a serious danger on the part of this brutal man. She had run away¹ frightened, taking little Pierre with her, and she meets Germain in time to have him protect and avenge her.² The farmer is punished, and the three return³ to their village.

Germain tries to forget his adventure by burying himself in his⁴ work, but he becomes so sad and so absent-minded that everybody remarks it. He dares not confess to his father-in-law that he is in love with Marie, who is too poor¹⁰ and too young to be his wife. But he thinks always of her; and, at last, he falls into such sadness that his mother-in-law questions him and learns his secret. She promises to obtain the consent of her husband to this marriage. But Germain does not know if Marie will want to marry a man older than¹⁵ she. At last, authorized by his father to go to see the young girl and speak to her, he betakes himself to the poor cottage of "la Mère Guillette." Marie is alone by the fireside, and so absorbed in her thoughts⁵ that she does not hear Germain come.⁶ The scene which passes between them is as natural²⁰ and as beautiful as all the others, and "petit Pierre" reappears, as in all the critical situations of the novel. He is the mediator, and, as it were,⁷ the bond between the first wife and the one who will be the second. Germain lifts him up in his arms; and, putting him in those of his betrothed,²⁵ he says: "Here, Marie, you have made more than one fellow happy by⁸ loving me!"

¹ past indefinite. ² meets . . . avenge her; *retrouve à temps Germain pour la protéger et la venger.* ³ tous les trois s'en retournent. ⁴ en se replongeant dans le. ⁵ so . . . thoughts; *si pensive.* ⁶ n'entend pas venir Germain. ⁷ as it were; *comme.* ⁸ he says . . . happy by; *tiens, Marie, lui dit-il, tu as fait plus d'un heureux en.*

6. THE SILENT ACADEMY: A TALE OF THE ORIENT.¹

There was at Amadan a celebrated academy, whose first statute was couched in² these terms: "The Academicians shall think much, write little, and talk as little as possible."³ It was called the Silent Academy, and there was not a real
 5 savant in all Persia who was not ambitious to⁴ be admitted into it. Doctor Zeb, author of an excellent little book, learned from his remote⁵ province that there was a vacancy in⁶ the Silent Academy. He departs at once, arrives at Amadan; and, presenting himself at the door of the hall
 10 where the Academicians are assembled, he begs the porter to hand the following note to the president:⁷ "Doctor Zeb humbly asks to receive the vacancy."⁸ The porter at once performed his⁹ errand, but the doctor and his note arrived¹⁰ too late; the place was¹⁰ already filled. The president,
 15 charged with the duty of announcing¹¹ this sad news to the doctor, could hardly make up his mind to do it,¹² and did not know in what way to do it.¹³ After having reflected a moment, he had a large bowl filled with water,¹⁴ but so perfectly¹⁵ filled that another drop would have made the liquid
 20 overflow;¹⁶ then, he signed to the porter to introduce¹⁷ the candidate. He appeared with that simple and modest look which almost always accompanies real merit. The president arose; and, without uttering a word, he pointed with a dis-

¹ conte oriental. ² était conçu en. ³ talk as . . . possible; *ne parlèrent que le moins qu'il sera possible.* ⁴ there was . . . ambitious to; *il n'était point en Perse de vrai savant qui n'eût l'ambition de.* ⁵ his remote; *au fond de sa.* ⁶ qu'il vaquait une place dans. ⁷ turn: 'to hand to the president this note.' ⁸ to receive the vacancy; *la place vacante.* ⁹ s'acquitta . . . de la. ¹⁰ imperfect. ¹¹ with . . . announcing; *d'annoncer.* ¹² could . . . to do it; *ne pouvait presque s'y résoudre.* ¹³ in what . . . it; *comment s'y prendre.* ¹⁴ he had . . . water; *il fit remplir d'eau une grande coupe.* ¹⁵ bien. ¹⁶ would have . . . overflow; *eût fait déborder la liqueur.* ¹⁷ signed . . . introduce; *fit signe qu'on introduisît.*

appointed look to¹ the symbolical bowl so exactly filled. The doctor understood that there was no place left in² the Academy; but, without losing courage, he endeavored to make the Assembly understand³ that a supernumerary Academician could do no harm.⁴ Seeing a rose leaf at his feet, 5 he picked it up⁵ and laid it so delicately on the surface of the water, that not a single drop escaped from it.⁶ At this ingenious answer, everybody applauded; the rules were set aside⁷ for that day, and the doctor was admitted⁸ by acclamation. 10

7. CHATEAUBRIAND.

In 1791, Chateaubriand explored North America as a⁹ poet and as an⁹ artist, not at all as a⁹ geographer and⁹ traveller. He buried himself in the forests of Upper Canada, lived with the Indian tribes, intoxicated with the majesty of that magnificent country.¹⁰ He brought back from this 15 extraordinary voyage admirable sketches, which were soon to appear under the titles of¹¹ *Atala*, *Les Natchez*, *René*. A newspaper happening to fall into¹² his hands, informed him of the progress¹³ of the Revolution, and¹⁴ tore him away from the New World. He embarked in haste, landed in France 20 about the middle of 1792, and joined¹⁵ the ranks of the "Emigrés" of Coblenz. Wounded at the siege of Thionville, he was left for dead at the edge¹⁶ of a wood. Saved almost by miracle, weak, without resources, he succeeded in

¹ pointed . . . look to; *lui montra d'un air affligé*. ² there was . . . in; *qu'il n'y avait plus de place à*. ³ endeavored . . . understand; *songeait à faire comprendre*. ⁴ could . . . harm; *n'y dérangerait rien*. ⁵ turn: 'he sees at his feet a rose leaf, he picks it up.' ⁶ *qu'il n'en échappe pas une seule goutte*. ⁷ were set aside; *on laissa dormir les règles*. ⁸ reçu. ⁹ as a; *en*. ¹⁰ *cette nature grandiose*. ¹¹ which . . . titles of; *d'où bientôt devaient se dégager les créations d' . . . des . . . de*. ¹² happening . . . into; *tombé entre*. ¹³ *en l'instruisant de la marche*. ¹⁴ omit this word. ¹⁵ joined; *alla se jeter dans*. ¹⁶ at the edge; *au coin*.

crossing over to¹ England, where he lived² for a few years in indigence and solitude.

Gifted with an incredible power for work,³ he earned⁴ his bread during the day with translations⁵ for publishers, and spent⁴ his⁶ nights in⁷ writing his *Essai sur les Révolutions*.

In 1801, Chateaubriand brought out⁸ his graceful Indian⁹ idyl of Atala, a¹⁰ poetic⁹ picture of the loves of two young savages, a¹⁰ composition full of ravishing⁹ descriptions, of inexpressible charm, of exquisite sentiment,¹¹ and of a dazzling brilliancy of style.¹² Its⁶ success was² immense, and the name of Chateaubriand, hardly known the day before,¹³ was² henceforth popularized in the whole of Europe. In 1826, there¹⁰ appeared an edition of his works. It brought him¹⁴ 500,000 francs. But neither the enormous⁹ sums which he received² for his works, nor his pensions, nor the gifts¹⁵ of Charles X. ever sufficed for¹⁶ his sumptuous⁹ tastes and his prodigality, and he was² constantly tormented by money cares.¹⁷

He also gave to the public some essays on English⁹ literature, and a literal⁹ translation, in prose, of Milton's "Paradise Lost."

Chateaubriand was² the loyal⁹ friend of the celebrated Madame Récamier, who had⁴ for him an admiration which resembled worship.¹⁸ They had met¹⁹ at the deathbed of Madame de Staël. In speaking of this friendship, he writes :

¹ in crossing over to; à passer en. ² past definite. ³ with . . . for work; d'une puissance de labeur incroyable. ⁴ imperfect. ⁵ des travaux de traduction. ⁶ use definite article. ⁷ à. ⁸ fit paraître. ⁹ place after the word modified. ¹⁰ omit this word. ¹¹ turn; 'of a charm (grâce, f.) inexpressible, of a sentiment exquisite.' ¹² dazzling . . . style; d'un coloris éblouissant. ¹³ hardly . . . before; la veille encore à peine connu. ¹⁴ il en obtint. ¹⁵ les générosités. ¹⁶ ever . . . for; ne suffirent jamais à. ¹⁷ des nécessités d'argent. ¹⁸ ressemblait à un culte. ¹⁹ faire connaissance.

"Agitated by these political occupations and disgusted by the ingratitude of courts, peace¹ of the heart awaited² me in the depth of this retreat (*l'Abbaye-au-Bois*), as the coolness³ of the woods after a⁴ burning⁵ plain." Until the end of his life, he reigned⁶ without a⁷ rival in this salon of *l'Abbaye-au-Bois*, the meeting place of most of the⁸ contemporary⁵ celebrities.

Chateaubriand died on the fourth of July, 1848, in the midst of the storms of a new⁵ revolution. According to⁹ the wish that he had expressed, his remains were placed¹⁰ in a tomb erected upon¹¹ an island near Saint-Malo.

It is there that he rests¹² in a tomb,¹³ whose simplicity is not without majesty.¹⁴ A stone without a⁷ name, a cross; behind,¹⁵ Saint-Malo; in front, the ocean and the sky; yonder, beyond the horizon where one's gaze loses itself,¹⁶ 15 America. All around him,⁷ the sound of the waves,¹⁷ which seems still to feed¹⁸ and to lull "the sadness of his soul and the eternal melancholy of his thought."

The most salient⁵ qualities of Chateaubriand are brilliancy¹⁹ of style, wealth of imagination, sensibility, passion, 20 eloquence, coloring, descriptive⁵ power,²⁰ and fecundity. Although⁷ admirably gifted in poetic qualities,²¹ he was never successful²² in poetry.

¹ *placidité*, f. ² imperfect. ³ *le frais*. ⁴ *au sortir d'une*. ⁵ place after the noun. ⁶ *trôna*. ⁷ omit this word. ⁸ the meeting . . . of the; *où se sont rencontrés la plupart des*. ⁹ *suivant*. ¹⁰ *ont été déposés*.
¹¹ in a tomb erected upon; *dans une tombe élevée sur*. ¹² *reposer*.
¹³ *sépulture*, f. ¹⁴ *faste*, m. ¹⁵ *par derrière*. ¹⁶ where . . . itself; *où le regard s'enfoncé*. ¹⁷ *le bruit du flot*. ¹⁸ still to feed; *entretenir encore*.
¹⁹ *éclat*, m.; use definite article before all these nouns. ²⁰ *puissance*, f.
²¹ in poetic qualities; *sous le rapport poétique*. ²² turn: 'he has, nevertheless, never succeeded (*réussir*) . . .'

IDIOMATIC PROSE COMPOSITION.

1. LITERARY NOTES ON SOME AUTHORS OF THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY.

a. Corneille.

with Youth of Corneille. — Pierre Corneille, by a rare combination of qualities, raised dramatic art to such a height that no one has ever excelled him.¹ He was born at Rouen, in 1606. He studied law to comply to his parents' wishes.²

5 A singular chance gave rise to the poetic genius of the young lawyer. A friend having taken him to the house of a young lady with whom he was in love, to make him a judge of his good taste, Corneille was so thoroughly convinced,³ that he soon became⁴ the rival of his friend. The
10 adventure appeared so comical to him, that, without knowing any rules of dramatic composition,⁵ he put it in the form of a⁶ comedy. He called his play *Mélite*, from the name of the young lady, and went to offer it modestly to some poor actors in⁷ Paris, whose fortune it made.

15 Corneille and his Brother. — Thomas Corneille, brother of the great Corneille, was born in Rouen in 1625. It is probable that the successes of his brother early turned his attention to⁸ the stage; moreover, he possessed genuine and natural talent, and a great faculty for work.⁹ It is

¹ *n'a pu le dépasser.* ² *pour ne pas déplaire à ses parents.* ³ add 'of it.' ⁴ *ne tarda pas à devenir.* ⁵ *aucune règle de théâtre.* ⁶ in the form of a; *en.* ⁷ *de.* ⁸ *vers.* ⁹ turn: 'he had a true talent natural and a great faculty for (*facilité, f., de*) work.'

interesting to know what close unity existed between his brother and himself.¹ As they had married two sisters, they made but one² household; and it was only after twenty-five years of life in common, that the idea occurred to them to divide³ the property, which, it is true, was not very considerable.⁴

It is related that the two poets mutually aided each other in the composition of their works. When one of them had trouble in finding a rhyme, he would open a trap door made⁵ in the floor, and appeal⁶ to the other, who was working below. Thomas Corneille had a prodigious faculty for⁷ versification. His memory was not less astonishing. He did not write his tragedies; he composed them in his mind, learned them by heart, then recited them from beginning to end.⁸ Once accepted, he wrote them to give them to the actors. The best known of his tragedies is entitled, "The Earl of Essex."⁹

External Appearance of Corneille.—This great man was of a simple and even commonplace appearance.⁹ His conversation was heavy and lacking in charm¹⁰ and vigor. Marville states that the first time he saw him, he took him for a merchant of Rouen. On this subject, Corneille describes himself thus¹¹:—

"J'ai la plume féconde et la bouche stérile,
Et l'on peut rarement m'écouter sans ennui
Que quand je me produis par la bouche d'autrui."

25

But elsewhere, in defending himself from the attacks of the Hôtel de Rambouillet, he says:—

¹ lui. ² ayant épousé les . . . ils formaient le même. ³ que les familles eurent l'idée de partager. ⁴ turn: 'which was (imperfect) not, it is true, considerable.' ⁵ pratiquée. ⁶ la demandait. ⁷ une facilité prodigieuse de. ⁸ d'un bout à l'autre. ⁹ turn: 'had an appearance (extérieur, m.) simple and . . .'. ¹⁰ lacking in charm; sans agréments. ¹¹ on this . . . thus; lui-même s'apprécie ainsi sous ce rapport.

"Et mes vers en tous lieux, sont mes seuls partisans;
Par leur seule beauté, ma plume est estimée,
Je ne dois qu'à moi seul toute ma renommée."

These same critics, to whom Corneille had read *Polyeucte*,
5 at the Hôtel de Rambouillet, feared¹ that a woman (*Pauline*) who loved at once her husband and her lover, would not interest² any one;³ and it was precisely this, which⁴ made¹ the success of the play. *Polyeucte* is the master-piece of Corneille, the play in which he has best succeeded
10 in combining⁵ the pathetic with⁶ the sublime.

Corneille as a⁷ Writer of Comedy.—Corneille also had the honor of producing⁸ *Le menteur*, the best play which had yet appeared⁹ upon⁹ the stage, and Molière did not hesitate¹ to recognize the worth of this piece. "When *Le*
15 *menteur* appeared," he said¹⁰ to Boileau, "I had a great desire to write, but I was uncertain of what I would write; my ideas were hazy: this work settled them."¹¹ Without *Le menteur*, I should doubtless have written some romantic plays,¹² but I should never have written *Le Misanthrope*."

20 "Embrace me," said Boileau to him, "this confession is worth the best of comedies."¹³

Characteristics of Corneille.—The most salient features of Corneille's genius are the energy, nobleness, and loftiness of his¹⁴ thoughts, power¹⁵ of conception, the incomparable
25 vigor with which he creates¹⁶ and develops his subjects, the abundance and variety of his dramatic effects, the moral beauty of his¹⁴ characters, manly eloquence of expression,

¹ past definite. ² tell why this verb must be put in the subjunctive.
³ replace by *pas*. ⁴ this, which; *ce qui*. ⁵ the play . . . combining;
où il a su le mieux allier. ⁶ *et*. ⁷ as a; *comme*. ⁸ *le mérite de donner*.
⁹ *à*. ¹⁰ after a direct quotation, the subject should follow the predicate.
¹¹ *vint les fixer*. ¹² *j'aurais fait, sans doute, quelques pièces d'intrigues*.
¹³ *voilà un aveu qui vaut la meilleure comédie*. ¹⁴ *des*. ¹⁵ *la puissance*. ¹⁶ *féconder*.

and that admirable faculty of rising to the sublime, naturally and without effort, at one bound, and sometimes by a single one of those expressions¹ which wring from the spectator cries of enthusiasm, and tears of admiration.

Commentary of Sainte-Beuve.—“His heroines, his *admirables furies*, almost all² resemble one another; their love is subtle, complex, and comes from the head rather³ than the heart. One feels that Corneille did not know women well.⁴ In a word, Corneille, a pure but incomplete genius, with his great qualities⁴ and his faults, reminds me of those great trees whose trunks are bare, rugged, sad, and uniform, and whose summits only, are adorned with branches and sombre verdure.”⁵

Last Days of Corneille.—The success⁶ of Racine saddened the old age of Corneille, and pecuniary troubles⁷ darkened his last days. It is well known⁸ that Corneille received¹² a pension of two thousand francs, which ceased being paid to him at the death of Colbert. In the last months of his life, illness exhausted his resources. Boileau, having been informed of his cruel situation, hastened⁹ to Versailles and offered the king the sacrifice of his own pension. “I cannot without shame,” he said to Madame de Montespan, “receive a pension from the king, whilst a man like Corneille is deprived of one.”¹⁰ Louis XIV. hastened to send a hundred louis to the illustrious patient. Two days later,¹¹ Corneille expired¹² at the age of seventy-eight.

¹ *mot*, m. ² place immediately after the verb. ³ *connaissait peu* . . .

⁴ a pure . . . qualities; *génie pur, incomplet avec ses hautes parties*.

⁵ turn: ‘trees, bare, rugged, sad, and uniform by the trunk, and adorned with sombre verdure only at their summit.’ ⁶ plural. ⁷ *embarras*, m.

⁸ *on sait*. ⁹ having been . . . hastened; *informé de sa position cruelle, courut*. ¹⁰ *en serait privé*. ¹¹ *après*. ¹² imperfect.

b. Molière.

"Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme."—During the presentation of the *Bourgeois Gentilhomme*, played for the first time in the Château de Chambord, the inscrutableness of the king kept the courtiers from applauding. The poet's enemies triumphed¹ over this silence, which they interpreted² unfavorably, and Molière waited¹ with anxiety for the second performance, hoping that the king would finally declare himself. And,³ sure enough, after having heard the piece a second time, he sent for him and said to him: "I did not speak to you of your play the first day, because I was afraid⁴ of being captivated by the manner in⁵ which it had been presented; but truly, Molière, you have written nothing yet⁶ which has so greatly entertained me."⁷

Generosity of Molière.—Molière enjoyed² an income of 30,000 or⁸ 40,000 livres, a very great fortune for those times. He spent² a great part of it in liberalities.⁹ It was¹⁰ he who advised young Racine to write¹¹ for the stage; he gave him a hundred louis after he had composed¹² his first tragedy. It was¹⁰ also¹³ Molière who trained¹ the celebrated actor, Baron. Molière had noticed him in a troupe of children who were playing¹⁴ in Paris. He took¹ him to his house and treated¹ him like a son.

One day, Baron came to him to say¹⁵ that a poor comedian from the³ province was asking for a little help¹⁶ to go to

¹ past definite. ² imperfect. ³ omit this word. ⁴ past indefinite. ⁵ de. ⁶ vous n'avez encore rien fait. ⁷ has . . . me; m'ait plus diverti. ⁸ à. ⁹ singular. ¹⁰ present. ¹¹ travailler. ¹² when no interval of time is supposed to have elapsed between the occurrence of two actions in the past, the earlier action is described by the past anterior; the later, by the past definite. Ex.: il lui donna cent louis après qu'il eut composé; note that the past anterior is almost always introduced by such words as dès que, aussitôt que, lorsque, quand, après que, etc. ¹³ encore. ¹⁴ add la comédie. ¹⁵ annoncer. ¹⁶ un léger secours.

join his troupe. "How much must I give him?" asked Molière. "Four pistoles will be quite¹ sufficient," replied Baron. "Give him four pistoles from² me; but here are twenty more³ that I shall give him from² you. I want him to know that it is to you that he owes the service I am 5 doing him."

The Supper at⁴ Auteuil.—The usual society of Molière was composed⁵ of Boileau,⁴ La Fontaine,⁴ Racine,⁴ the musician Lulli,⁴ the painter Mignard, and⁴ Chapelle. They were in the habit of meeting from time to time at Auteuil, at 10 Boileau's house.

One evening, Chapelle did the honors of the wine cellar so well, that all the guests became intoxicated. The wine had the effect of making them all extremely low spirited.⁶ One of them happened to quote this maxim of an ancient 15 poet:⁷ "The first happiness of man is not to have been born at all;⁸ and the second, is to die." The company, but a moment since so gay, immediately formed the resolution to have an end of⁹ life. They rose,¹⁰ embraced one another and started. On the way, Molière, who was less intoxicated than¹¹ 20 the others, remarked¹² that such a noble deed should not be¹⁰ hidden by the darkness¹³ of the night, and that it deserved to be performed¹⁴ in broad daylight. They stopped,¹⁰ and exclaimed as they looked at one another,¹⁵ "He is right!" The following day changed their ideas, and they thought it 25 was wise to¹⁶ bear a little longer¹⁷ the miseries of life.

¹ bien. ² pour. ³ en voilà vingt autres. ⁴ de. ⁵ reflexive form. ⁶ had the . . . spirited; *les jeta dans la morale la plus lugubre.* ⁷ omit this word. ⁸ happiness . . . at all; *bonheur est de ne point naître.* ⁹ immediately . . . end of; *prend aussitôt le parti d'en finir avec.* ¹⁰ put this and following verbs in the present. ¹¹ who was. . . than; *moins pris que.* ¹² remarked; *leur représente cependant.* ¹³ hidden by the darkness; *ensevelie dans les ténèbres.* ¹⁴ faire. ¹⁵ exclaimed . . . another; *se disent en se regardant.* ¹⁶ thought it was wise to; *jugèrent à propos de.* ¹⁷ a little longer; *encore.*

Bon Mot of the Prince de Condé.—After a performance of *Le Misanthrope*, Boileau was congratulating Molière on this admirable masterpiece. "You will see something much finer yet,"¹ said his friend to him. He was thinking of² *Tartufe*, which is regarded as one of the most perfect works of the great poet. This comedy raised against Molière a perfect storm.³ A vicar in⁴ Paris went so far as to say⁵ in a pamphlet that so dangerous a man should be burned.⁶ The king was surprised at this indignation; and, in a conversation which he had with the Prince de Condé, he mentioned a certain⁷ play in which God was insulted, and which had, nevertheless, been tolerated. "Sire," answered the prince, "in that play, God only is insulted,⁸ whilst Molière attacks⁹ men."

Molière's Comments on Corneille.¹⁰—One day, while Molière was dressing, two wits came in and spoke with great eulogy of a tragedy of Corneille, played the day before for the first time. Molière listened¹¹ to them without saying a word.¹² "Well, gentlemen," he said to them when he was dressed, "you believe then that Corneille is the author of what you heard? Learn that there is a little sprite that has taken a fancy to him.¹³ When he sees that Corneille is sitting down at his desk to bite his finger-nails, and attempt to write¹⁴ a few verses, then the little sprite goes up to him¹⁵ and dictates to him four, eight, ten, sometimes even¹⁶ twenty verses at a time, which are above everything that a man can do. After which, the little sprite goes away¹⁷ a few steps, say-

¹ something much finer yet; *bien autre chose*. ² *voulait parler du*.

³ raised . . . storm; *souleva contre Molière une violente tempête*. ⁴ *de*.

⁵ so far as to say; *jusqu'à dire*. ⁶ that . . . burned; *qu'il fallait brûler un homme aussi dangereux*. ⁷ mentioned a certain; *il lui fit observer telle*.

⁸ *on n'offense que Dieu*. ⁹ *s'attaquer à*. ¹⁰ turn: 'Molière on Corneille.'

¹¹ imperfect. ¹² *sans mot dire*. ¹³ *qui l'a pris en affection*. ¹⁴ *faire*.

¹⁵ goes . . . him; *s'approche*. ¹⁶ *quelquefois même jusqu'à*. ¹⁷ *se retirer*.

ing: 'Let us see how the poor fellow is going to get on by himself!'¹ Then, Corneille writes the following ten, twenty, thirty verses,² which are entirely commonplace, and sometimes even bad.³ The next day, the same game begins again between the sprite and Corneille. Take care, gentlemen, not to confound the two authors; one is a man, the other is more than a man."

c. Boileau.

Boileau Despréaux was born at Paris in 1636. He made himself⁴ celebrated by his *Satires*, his *Épîtres*, and his⁵ *Art poétique*. In his *Satires*, Boileau had⁶ two ob-¹⁰jects: to make war upon⁷ bad poets and to sanction legitimate reputations. He successively attacked all fashionable foibles, and covered with ridicule all the versifiers that showed neither taste nor talent.⁸

Boileau had made himself known⁹ early at court by his¹⁵ works. He was forty-seven years old, when he was received at the French Academy. The king having asked him one day if he made part of that illustrious body, he¹⁰ answered: "Sire, I do not;¹¹ I am not worthy of it." "You shall be,"¹² replied the king; "I wish it." The Academy having²⁰ elected La Fontaine, the king refused to sanction this election. Some time after, the Academy admitted¹³ Boileau. "It is a good choice," said Louis XIV.; "everybody will approve;¹⁴ now, you may appoint La Fontaine."

Louis XIV. always treated¹⁵ him with great¹⁶ considera-²⁵

¹ the poor . . . himself; *ce vilain va faire tout seul*. ² *les dix, vingt . . . de suite*. ³ *où il n'y a rien que de très commun, où même il y a souvent du mauvais*. ⁴ *se rendre*. ⁵ use definite article. ⁶ *se proposa*. ⁷ *à*. ⁸ that showed neither . . . talent; *sans goût et sans talent*. ⁹ in French construction, when two verbs come close together and the first is not an auxiliary, the second is always an infinitive. ¹⁰ omit this word. ¹¹ turn: 'I am not of it.' ¹² verb must be preceded by *en*. ¹³ *recevoir*. ¹⁴ *applaudir*. ¹⁵ past definite. ¹⁶ *beaucoup de*.

tion, and he consulted¹ him as an infallible judge in matters of taste. The critic sometimes expressed¹ his way² of thinking, with a frankness which bordered upon³ bluntness. The king asked¹ him, one day, what authors had best succeeded in comedy. "I know of⁴ only one," he replied, "and that is Molière. All the others have written⁵ only farces, like those wretched⁶ plays of Scarron."

One day, Louis XIV. asked⁷ his opinion about some verses which he had amused himself by⁸ writing.⁵ "Sire," cleverly replied Boileau, "nothing⁹ is impossible to your Majesty. You¹⁰ have desired to write⁵ poor¹¹ verses, and you have succeeded admirably."¹²

Boileau, so inflexible in matters of taste and so pitiless toward poor¹¹ works, was¹ kind and gentle in his¹³ private life, and his conversation, as he¹⁴ says himself, "had¹ neither nails nor claws."¹⁵ Madame de Sévigné used to say that he was¹ "tender in prose and cruel in verse." Several incidents¹⁶ attest the generosity of his heart. Patru, the creator of forensic eloquence, having fallen into the greatest need, saw himself reduced to selling his fine¹⁷ library. Boileau learned that he was going to sell¹⁸ it for a rather modest sum; ¹⁹ he immediately offered him a third more for it,²⁰ paid it, and laid down as a²¹ condition that Patru should keep his books until his death.

Boileau died at the age of seventy-five (1711), and was buried in⁸ the Sainte-Chapelle.

¹ imperfect. ² *façon*, f. ³ bordered upon; *tenait de la*. ⁴ omit this word. ⁵ *faire*. ⁶ *vilaines*. ⁷ verb must be preceded by *lui*. ⁸ *à*. ⁹ both negatives precede the verb. ¹⁰ *elle*; to agree with *majesté*. ¹¹ *mauvais*. ¹² you . . . admirably; *elle y a parfaitement réussi*. ¹³ use definite article. ¹⁴ insert *le*. ¹⁵ reverse the order. ¹⁶ *trait*, m. ¹⁷ *riche*. ¹⁸ *donner*. ¹⁹ *une somme assez modique*. ²⁰ he . . . for it; *il lui en offrit aussitôt un tiers de plus*. ²¹ laid down as a; *mit pour*.

d. La Fontaine.

Youth of La Fontaine. — Jean de La Fontaine was born in 1621 at Château-Thierry, where his father was inspector of the rivers and forests.¹ His education was rather neglected, and nothing in his youth² revealed what he was to be one day. At home, he was remarkable only for³ his indolence, uselessness, and a keen love of⁴ pleasure.⁵ His father tried to tear him away from his laziness and excesses, by⁶ giving up his office to him, and⁶ marrying him to⁷ a young lady of great merit, witty, amiable, and graceful. But La Fontaine manifested⁸ the same nonchalance in his new position,² and accustomed himself to living as if he had neither office nor wife. If he visited his old trees and his streams, it was doubtless only to enjoy the pleasure⁸ of a solitary walk or reverie.

La Fontaine and his Son. — La Fontaine gradually² separated himself from⁹ his family, and at the end of a few years, left¹⁰ his wife and son without divorce suit or¹¹ scandal. He even² finished, they say, by forgetting that he was married. One day, at¹² an entertainment,² he met a young man whose distinguished manners delighted¹³ him from the first. As he was warmly praising him, some one said to him · “Why, he is your son!”¹⁴ “Ah, indeed, I am very glad of it,” he replied coldly.

Rabelais was the favorite author of La Fontaine ; he had for him a boundless admiration, and when he wished to

¹ *maître des eaux et forêts.* ² place directly after the verb; this note may refer either to adverbs or adverbial phrases which in the English text precede the verb, or are separated from it. ³ *à la maison paternelle, il ne se fit remarquer que par.* ⁴ *penchant (m.) pour.* ⁵ plural. ⁶ *en.* ⁷ *avec.* ⁸ *apporter.* ⁹ *s'éloigner de.* ¹⁰ *se séparer de.* ¹¹ replace by *sans.* ¹² *dans.* ¹³ *plaire (à).* ¹⁴ *comme il en faisait l'éloge: "C'est votre fils," lui dit-on.* Observe that in French, words that serve to introduce a quotation, instead of preceding it, are often found after it, or connecting parts of it.

express his approbation in the most emphatic manner,¹ he would say: "It is as² beautiful as Rabelais!"

Absence of Mind³ of La Fontaine. — Boileau and Racine tried to reconcile La Fontaine to⁴ his wife, and persuaded
5 him to make a trip to Château-Thierry with⁵ this object.⁶ He went off with⁶ this laudable intention; but not finding⁷ his wife, he went to see a friend with whom he spent the night joyously, and left the next day, pleased with his journey, and not remembering that he had had any other
20 object in coming than that of⁸ diverting himself.

After the publication of the Fables, Louis XIV. once more⁹ bestowed his favors upon the poet, whose pension had been suspended, on account of his attachment to the fallen minister, Fouquet. The king even⁶ permitted La
15 Fontaine to offer him his book in person.⁶ The poet went to Versailles to present it to the king, recited his speech very well,⁶ and forgot only one thing, namely, to⁹ bring his Fables. The king, nevertheless,⁶ received him kindly and presented him with a purse full of gold. Hardly had he
20 returned home,¹⁰ than² the poet perceived that he had lost his purse. It was found¹¹ under the cushion of the carriage that had brought him back.

Madame de La Sablière often⁶ reproved him for his absence of mind,³ which bordered sometimes upon rudeness.
25 A rich financier had invited him to dinner, in the hope that he would amuse his guests. La Fontaine ate and kept¹² silence. As the dinner dragged on, he got tired and rose from the² table, under the² pretext of going to the Academy. He was made to observe¹³ that it was not yet

¹ *de la manière la plus expressive.* ² omit; this note may refer either to single words or phrases. ³ *distractions.* ⁴ *avec.* ⁵ *dans.* ⁶ see page 133, footnote 2. ⁷ turn: 'not having met.' ⁸ any other object in coming than that of; *un autre but que celui de.* ⁹ namely, to; *ce fut de.* ¹⁰ had he . . . home; *de retour chez lui.* ¹¹ *on la retrouva.* ¹² insert *le.* ¹³ *on lui fit observer.*

time. "Well," said he, "I will take the longest way;" and he went out. One is not surprised that Madame de La Sablière often said to him: "Truly, my dear La Fontaine, you would be very stupid, if you were not so clever."¹

La Fontaine's Friends.—Among the friends and pro- 5
tectors of La Fontaine, we must include Turenne, Condé, the Prince de Conti, and the Prince de Vendôme, with whom he lived upon terms of² an amiable familiarity. Some ladies of the court treated him with extreme kindness;³ for instance,⁴ the Duchesse de Bouillon, Madame de 10
Sévigné, Madame de La Fayette, Madame de La Sablière, and Madame d'Hervart.

Madame de La Sablière gave¹⁰ him for more than twenty years his board and lodging,⁵ and provided¹⁰ for⁶ all his needs. A remark of this lady's⁷ shows upon what a 15
familiar footing La Fontaine lived in her house. One day that she had dismissed all her servants, she said:⁸ "I have sent away all my household;⁹ I have kept only my dog, my cat, and La Fontaine."

Anecdote about Baruch.—The private life of La Fon- 20
taine was¹⁰ scandalous, and Racine tried¹⁰ in vain to exert over him a salutary influence. One day, when¹¹ he had taken him to church, he gave¹⁰ him the Bible to entertain him. La Fontaine fell¹⁰ upon the book of the prophet Baruch, and he was filled with admiration for him.¹² "This 25
Baruch was a great genius;¹³ who was he?" he asked his friend. The next day, he went about repeating¹⁴ in the

¹ *n'aviez pas tant d'esprit.* ² upon terms of; *dans.* ³ *l'accueillirent avec une extrême bienveillance.* ⁴ omit 'for instance.' ⁵ *le vivre et le couvert.* ⁶ *à.* ⁷ *un mot de cette dame.* ⁸ see page 133, footnote 14. ⁹ *tout mon monde.* ¹⁰ past definite. ¹¹ *que.* ¹² he was . . . him; *en fut ravi d'admiration.* ¹³ *c'était un beau génie que Baruch;* note this inverted form of expression, which is more emphatic than the logical order would be. ¹⁴ *allait répétant.*

street to every person of his acquaintance whom¹ he¹ met :¹
 "Have you read Baruch? He was a great genius."

It was during his sojourn at the house of Madame de La Sablière that La Fontaine composed the greater part
 5 of his Fables. He was in the habit of reading all his
 verses to her before publishing them, or showing them
 even to his friends. One day, he sent a piece of verse to
 Racine and wrote to him :² "Above all,² do not show
 them to any one, for Madame de La Sablière has not yet
 10 seen them."

The Duchesse de Bouillon, in calling La Fontaine her
 "fablier," seemed to imply that he had produced fables
 as a tree produces fruit.³ Madame de Sévigné used to
 say of La Fontaine's volume¹ of¹ fables : "It is a basket of
 15 cherries ; one wishes to pick out the finest, and the basket
 is emptied."⁴

Fouquet, Protector of La Fontaine. — Fouquet, who had
 declared himself the protector of artists and men of letters,
 conceived a friendship for La Fontaine, attached him to his
 20 person, and gave him⁵ a pension of a¹ thousand livres, on
 condition that he would acknowledge the receipt of it,⁶
 every quarter, by a piece of verse, a¹ ballad or madrigal.

From that time, the poet took up his residence in Paris,
 where he became intimate⁷ with Boileau, Racine, and Mo-
 25 lière. Racine, especially, though eighteen years younger
 than he,⁸ loved him and was loved by him. The absence of
 mind⁹ and the *naïveté* of La Fontaine enlivened the meet-
 ings at¹⁰ Auteuil. They¹¹ called him "le bonhomme" and
 laughed sometimes at his expense.¹² "Let us not make fun

¹ omit this word. ² *surtout, lui écrivait-il.* ³ names of fruit trees generally end in *ier*. ⁴ *reste vide.* ⁵ conceived . . . gave him; *prit La Fontaine en amitié, se l'attacha et lui fit.* ⁶ that he . . . of it; *qu'il en acquitterait.* ⁷ *se lia intimement.* ⁸ *quoique moins âgé que lui de . . .* ⁹ plural ¹⁰ *de.* ¹¹ *on.* ¹² *à ses dépens.*

of the 'bonhomme,' he will live longer than we, perhaps,"¹ said Molière, who always¹ took his part.²

Epitaph, — composed by La Fontaine himself during³ the time of his worldly life: —

" Jean s'en alla comme il était venu,	5
Mangeant son fonds avec son revenu,	
Croyant trésor chose peu nécessaire.	
Quant à son temps, bien sut le dispenser :	
Deux parts en fit, dont il voulait passer	
L'une à dormir et l'autre à ne rien faire."	10

c. Racine.

Voltaire's Opinion of Racine.⁴ — Jean Racine is the most accomplished poet of the French language as regards⁵ the harmony, purity, and charm of his verse.⁶ When some one asked Voltaire to write a commentary of⁷ Racine, as he had done for⁸ Corneille, he answered: "I have none to make; 15 what I should have to do, would be to put⁹ at the bottom of every page: beautiful, harmonious, admirable, pathetic, sublime!" Upon rereading *Mithridates*, Voltaire said of Racine: "This is¹⁰ the poet of the universe who has best understood¹¹ the human heart. The¹² more one reads Ra- 20 cine, the¹² more one discovers in him¹³ a unique talent, set off by all the delicacies of art. If there is anything on earth that approaches¹⁴ perfection, it is he." On¹⁵ the subject of the admirable tragedy of *Athalie*, Voltaire exclaimed:¹⁶ "What style! What poetry! What a man 25 was¹⁷ this Jean Racine! How he goes straight to the

¹ see page 133, footnote 2. ² *parti*, m. ³ *dans*. ⁴ *Racine commenté par Voltaire*. ⁵ as regards; *pour*. ⁶ plural. ⁷ *sur*. ⁸ turn: 'as he of them had made one on.' ⁹ to do . . . put; *à dire, ce serait de mettre*. ¹⁰ *voilà*. ¹¹ *connaître*. ¹² omit this word. ¹³ translate 'in him' by *lui* and place before the verb. ¹⁴ *sur terre quelque chose qui approche de la*. ¹⁵ *à*. ¹⁶ imperfect. ¹⁷ replace by *qui*.

heart! I am tempted to throw everything I have written into the fire, when I reread his works."¹

Racine's Answer to the Prince de Condé.—The attractions of the court, which he had not ceased frequenting, although he had retired² from the world, did not equal the joy that he felt³ at being in the bosom of his family.⁴ As he was returning from Versailles one day,⁵ a son of the great Condé came up⁶ to him to say that they were expecting him at dinner. "I shall not have the honor of going there," he answered; "it is more than a week since⁷ I have seen my wife and children, who are looking forward to eating⁸ with me to-day⁹ a very fine carp. I cannot excuse myself from dining with them."

Phèdre.—This tragedy was written after a sort of challenge. One day, in a drawing-room,¹⁰ Racine insisted that the suffering⁹ of a guilty person could,¹⁰ if⁸ treated with talent, excite a deeper compassion than that of a virtuous person. In this tragedy, he tried to interest the spectators in¹¹ the fate of *Phèdre*, victim of a guilty and unconquerable passion.

After having produced *Phèdre*, Racine, though⁶ still young and in the zenith of¹² his literary glory, suddenly¹³ gave up the stage and ceased, not only writing for the stage,¹⁴ but even attending the performance of his tragedies.

Racine's Family.—Racine married Mademoiselle de Romanet, daughter of a Comptroller of the Finances. She was a pious and sensible woman,¹⁵ but without any

¹ everything . . . works; *au feu tout ce que j'ai fait quand je le relis.*
² *quoiqu'il se fût retiré.* ³ *éprouvait.* ⁴ at being . . . family; *d'être au milieu des siens.* ⁵ see page 133, footnote 2. ⁶ omit this word. ⁷ *il y a plus de huit jours que.* ⁸ who are . . . eating; *qui se font une fête de manger.* ⁹ *malheur, m.* ¹⁰ imperfect. ¹¹ *à.* ¹² in the zenith of; *dans toute.* ¹³ *brusquement.* ¹⁴ *scène, f.* ¹⁵ *personne, f.*

appreciation¹ of literature. She had never set foot in a theatre, and knew the plays of her husband only by² name. Racine had seven children; his one fear was to³ have a poet among them.⁴ He used to tell his eldest son that success⁵ does not make a⁶ poet happy, and he confessed that the least criticism had pained him more than the greatest praises had given him⁷ pleasure. "Do not believe," he used to say, "that it is⁸ my verses which procure me the attention⁹ of the great.⁵ Corneille writes verses a hundred times more beautiful than mine, and yet nobody looks at him. Instead of wearying the people of society with conversations about my works, I converse with them¹⁰ of things which please them. My idea¹¹ with them is not to make them feel¹² that I have wit, but to² inform¹³ them that they have. Thus, when you see Monsieur le duc¹⁵ de Bourbon spending whole hours with me, you would be surprised, if you were present, to notice that he often goes out without my having said four words.¹⁴ But little by little, I set him to talking,¹⁵ and he leaves my house,¹⁶ still more satisfied with himself¹⁷ than with me."²⁰

f. Madame de Sévigné.

Early¹⁸ Education of Madame de Sévigné.— Marie de Rabutin-Chantal, marquise de Sévigné, was born in Paris in 1626, of one of the most ancient families of Burgundy. She was only five years old when she lost her father, that famous duellist, who, on Easter day 1624, left¹⁹ the church²⁵

¹ notion, f. ² de. ³ his one . . . to; *toute sa crainte était d'*. ⁴ a poet among them; *un fils poète*. ⁵ plural. ⁶ le. ⁷ ne lui avaient fait de. ⁸ que ce soient. ⁹ m'attirent les caresses. ¹⁰ with conversations . . . with them; *du récit de mes ouvrages, je les entretiens*. ¹¹ talent, m. ¹² de leur faire sentir. ¹³ apprendre (à). ¹⁴ de voir que souvent il en sort sans que j'aie dit quatre paroles. ¹⁵ le mets en humeur de causer. ¹⁶ sort de chez moi. ¹⁷ lui. ¹⁸ première. ¹⁹ sortit de.

right in the middle of¹ Mass, saying aloud that he was going to serve as a² second to the no³ less famous duellist, de Bouteville. He was killed while⁴ defending the island of Ré against the English. His wife survived him but a short
 5 time. An¹² orphan at the age of six, Marie de Rabutin received a brilliant⁵ education. She had for teachers Ménage and Chapelain, poor⁶ poets, but fine scholars,⁷ who taught her besides French,—Latin, Spanish, and Italian. The court of Anne of Austria still further polished⁸ her mind.

10 **Marriage of Madame de Sévigné.** — Presented very early⁹.
 at court, Marie de Rabutin was sought after for her wit, her great fortune, and the charm of a physiognomy which was gracious rather than beautiful.¹⁰ Numerous suitors¹¹ presented themselves. She married Henri de Sévigné, who,
 15 killed in a¹² duel, left her a¹³ widow with two children, after seven years of marriage. This union had not been happy. Conrart used to say that there was this difference between Madame de Sévigné and her husband: ¹³ the latter esteemed his wife without being able to love her, whilst she loved him
 20 without being able to esteem him. It appears that the marquis used to say very frankly¹⁴ to the marquise: "I think you would be very attractive to¹⁵ another man,¹² but as¹² for me, I cannot love you."¹⁶

After the death of her husband, she devoted herself to
 25 the education of her children. Many opportunities for a second marriage presented themselves,¹⁷ and quite as large a number of admirers: ¹⁸ Turenne, the Prince de Conti, Fouquet, the Chevalier de Méré, down to her former pro-

¹ right in the middle of; *au beau milieu de la*. ² as a; *de*. ³ non.
⁴ *se fit tuer en*. ⁵ *solide*; after the noun. ⁶ *mauvais*. ⁷ *littérateurs*
érudits. ⁸ *acheva de polir*. ⁹ *très jeune*. ¹⁰ turn: 'charm (*éclat*, m.)
 of a physiognomy rather gracious than beautiful.' ¹¹ *parti*, m. ¹² omit.
¹³ change colon to comma, and add *que*. ¹⁴ *tout crâment*. ¹⁵ *pour*.
¹⁶ *vous ne sauriez me plaire*. ¹⁷ *de se remarier s'offrirent à elle*. ¹⁸ *un*
non moins grand nombre de soupirants.

fessor, Ménage; none had any success.¹ The one of her lovers who had the most chance² of being well treated, was Bussy, her own cousin. He used to praise the tact with which she managed to discourage her lovers without making them angry. "You are the only woman in³ the kingdom,"⁵ he wrote to her, "who can⁴ induce a lover to content himself with friendship."

Madame de Sévigné at Court.—After the departure of her daughter, Madame de Sévigné continued to live at the court, going from time to time to pass⁵ a season at her estate, *Les Rochers*,⁶ in Brittany. She enjoyed herself⁷ at Versailles, and the smallest attention from the king overwhelmed her with satisfaction.⁸ One evening, he danced with her; she was so dazzled that, returning to her place, she said to her cousin: "It must be confessed⁹ that we¹⁵ have a great king." "I should think so,¹⁰ after what he has just¹¹ done," replied Bussy mischievously.¹²

The most intimate friends of Madame de Sévigné were Fouquet, Cardinal de Retz, and Monsieur and Madame de Pomponne. Many of her letters are written to her excellent²⁰ uncle, the Abbé de Coulanges, who had brought her up and who left her his whole fortune. She calls him in her letters "le Bien-bon."

Madame de Sévigné at Saint-Cyr.—On another occasion, she showed the intense¹³ satisfaction which she felt at¹⁴²⁵ the least evidence of favor. She had come to attend the

¹ ne réussit. ² eut le plus de chance. ³ il n'y a que vous dans. ⁴ explain the use of the subjunctive here. ⁵ place immediately after allant. ⁶ dans sa terre des "Rochers." ⁷ se plaisait. ⁸ aise, f. ⁹ il faut avouer. ¹⁰ je le crois bien. ¹¹ 'to have just,' followed by a past participle, and used to speak of an action that has just occurred, is rendered into French by *venir de*, followed by an infinitive present. ¹² turn: 'the mischievous Bussy.' ¹³ une autre fois encore, elle laissa percer toute la folle. ¹⁴ que lui causait.

first performance of *Esther* at Saint-Cyr. "The king," she writes, "came toward our seats, and turning,¹ he addressed himself to me, and said: 'Madame, I am sure that you have been entertained.' Without surprise, I² answered: 5 'Sire, I am charmed; what I feel is beyond words.' The king said to me: 'Racine has a great deal of talent.'³ 'Sire, he has indeed;⁴ but, in truth, these young ladies have a great deal too: they enter into the subject as if they had never done anything else.'⁵ He said to me: 'Ah, as 10 to that, you are certainly right.'⁶ And then his Majesty went away, leaving⁷ me the object of envy."

Opinion of Sainte-Beuve.—"The⁸ more one thinks of it," says Sainte-Beuve, "the⁸ more easily can one explain⁹ her maternal affection, this love which for her represented 15 all others. This rich, strong nature had never had any passion properly so-called.¹⁰ An⁸ orphan at the age of six, she had never known¹¹ filial tenderness; she never speaks of her mother. Conjugal love had been⁷ bitter to her. She rather fancied¹² her cousin Bussy, but she did not love⁷ him 20 with passion. Her daughter inherited⁷ all the savings of this heart so rich and so sensitive—a heart that¹³ had said until that day: 'I am waiting.' Madame de Grignan was⁷ the one¹⁴ passion of her mother. It is to her correspondence with her daughter, after her departure for Provence—a cor- 25 respondence which lasted twenty-seven years—that she owes her glory."

"If I could only live two hundred years," Madame de Sévigné used to say, "it seems to me that I should be a very admirable person." This wish for a long life,¹⁵ which

¹ après avoir tourné. ² moi, sans m'étonner, je. ³ bien de l'esprit.
⁴ turn: 'he of it has much.' ⁵ anything else; autre chose. ⁶ pour cela, il en est vrai. ⁷ past definite. ⁸ omit this word. ⁹ mieux on s'explique. ¹⁰ so-called; dite. ¹¹ ne sentit point. ¹² agrée un peu. ¹³ a heart that; et qui. ¹⁴ unique. ¹⁵ ce souhait de longue durée.

she formed with a view to the moral perfection which she desired to attain, finds itself realized for her memory. The correspondence of Madame de Sévigné, like¹ *Les Provinciales*, *Les Fables* and *Les Femmes Savantes*, is² perfection in a given style. Her³ charming mind could⁴ put a prodigious variety in the expression of a sentiment ever the same, and make the court, the city, the province, the entire world revolve⁵ around her daughter.

2. THE GENIUS OF BALZAC COMPARED WITH THAT OF GEORGE SAND.

Balzac said one day to George Sand: "You paint man such as he ought to be; I⁶ take him such as he is. But I¹⁰ believe me, we are both right.⁷ These two roads lead to the same goal. I too⁷ love exceptional beings; I am one of them. I need them⁸ to bring out my commonplace characters,⁹ and I never⁷ sacrifice them without necessity. But these vulgar beings interest me more than they¹⁰ interest you; I enlarge them, I idealize them in the opposite sense,¹¹ in their ugliness or their stupidity. I give to their deformities frightful or grotesque proportions. You cannot do so.¹² You do well not to¹³ wish to look at beings and things which would give you the nightmare. Idealize¹⁴ the pretty and the beautiful; that is a woman's work."¹⁵

Balzac idealizes, but his point of departure is reality. He observes seven or eight misers, adds them up as it were, and creates¹⁶ his Grandet. He concentrates in a single

¹ replace by *est de même titre que*. ² replace by *et ce titre, c'est la*.
³ *ce*. ⁴ *a su*. ⁵ make the court . . . revolve; *faire pivoter la cour* . . .
⁶ *moi, je*. ⁷ place after the verb. ⁸ *il m'en faut*. ⁹ *être, m.* ¹⁰ when the comparison is one of inequality, as here, *ne* must precede the second verb, if the first verb is affirmative.* ¹¹ *en sens inverse*. ¹² *vous, vous ne sauriez pas*. ¹³ *de ne pas*. ¹⁴ insert *dans*. ¹⁵ *c'est un ouvrage de femme*. ¹⁶ *faire*.

* The recent decree allows the use or omission of *ne* in this case.

being the characteristics¹ of several, and creates a type. Grandet is more complete, more consistent, more terrible, than any real² miser. This is true³ of all his principal characters. One cannot deny that it is fine, strong, powerful art.⁴ Beings⁵ thus created have life; they move under our eyes; one sees them, one cannot forget them. Balzac lived in their society, he saw them; he was like a lion-tamer surrounded by wild beasts.⁶

The miser Grandet cannot say a word, make a gesture, eat, go to bed, deal with his wife, his daughter, his servants, or⁷ strangers, without showing what he is. Instead of saying vaguely: "This horrible passion had stifled within him all the sentiments of nature," Balzac shows him at work, the⁸ torturer of his wife, of his daughter. We behold the agony of these beings whom the miser tramples upon.⁹ Not one fact is unimportant; every blow carries. One feels pity, terror, horror,¹⁰ an interest mingled with affright; one feels that this dreadful machine will seize, absorb in its wheels and tear into shreds everything that approaches it. Molière's *Harpagon* is odious, but he is grotesque also, and he is vanquished. Grandet is awful, he makes one shudder,¹¹ and he dies buried in his gold. After him, there¹² is¹³ gold, nothing but gold for his daughter; the springs of the life of the heart are dried up in Eugénie Grandet; the miser has killed her morally. He is like¹⁴ those trees in whose shade¹⁵ everything languishes and dies.¹⁶

Here, Balzac is in his element. He paints force, a unique force which is the whole of the man,¹⁷ which one finds¹⁸

¹ caractère, m. ² réel, irr.; after the noun. ³ this is true; *ainsi*.
⁴ turn: 'that this (*cela*) is fine, that this is strong, that this is of an art powerful (*puissant*).'
⁵ must be preceded by *ces*. ⁶ *ses fauves*. ⁷ replace by *les*. ⁸ omit this word. ⁹ we . . . tramples upon; *on assiste à l'agonie de ces êtres que piétine l'avare*. ¹⁰ insert *c'est*. ¹¹ *donne le frisson*. ¹² he is like; *tels*. ¹³ *à l'ombre desquels*. ¹⁴ repeat the subject. ¹⁵ the . . . man; *tout l'homme*. ¹⁶ *retrouver*.

everywhere in him.* It is in¹ paintings of this kind — in the development of a single² passion — that Balzac is really great.

At the end of his study on Balzac, Taine says: "With Shakespeare and Saint-Simon, Balzac is the largest collection 5 of documents that we have³ upon human nature." One may add that Balzac has shown all that the strongest nature can do,⁴ when it is totally devoid of an⁵ ideal; and art, under whatever form, cannot⁶ do without it.

Quite different⁷ is the method of George Sand. She 10 does not seek to reproduce the real by completing it, nor⁸ to create⁹ characters and⁵ types. She is not of the family of⁹ Shakespeare, of⁹ Molière; she belongs to¹⁰ that of⁹ Rousseau, of dreamers, of contemplators, and not¹¹ of observers; to that of poets, and not¹¹ of psychologists, and still less of 15 physiologists. Hardly does she describe the appearance¹² of her characters. She has an idea, or she is possessed by a sentiment. She wishes to express, under an artistic form, this idea or this sentiment, its various aspects, the successive phases of its development; and to do this¹³ she creates 20 personages, embodies in individuals¹⁴ pure operations of the mind. She has said: "One must create the characters for the sentiment that one wishes to describe, and not¹¹ the sentiment for the characters." These are her system and her method;¹⁵ they have their inconveniences and their ad- 25 vantages. Are beings thus created, very real?¹⁶ very life-like? A human being, a man, a woman, of the nineteenth

¹ insert *les*. ² *unique*; after the noun. ³ explain the use of the subjunctive here. ⁴ *tout ce que peut la nature la plus forte*. ⁵ omit this word. ⁶ under . . . cannot; *sous quelque forme que ce soit, ne saurait*. ⁷ *tout autre*. ⁸ *faire*. ⁹ *des*, although the proper noun retains its singular form. ¹⁰ *elle est de*. ¹¹ *non*. ¹² *c'est à peine si elle indique l'extérieur*. ¹³ to do this; *pour cela*. ¹⁴ *en des êtres de*. ¹⁵ *voilà la méthode et le procédé*. ¹⁶ turn: 'these beings thus created, are they very real (*bien réels*).'

century, are these¹ pure abstractions? Can they be reduced to express only² an idea, often even a mere aspiration? These characters are often pure, floating, luminous shadows,³ which glide beneath⁴ our eyes.

5 Balzac makes a portrait, and wants to make it life-like.⁵ No detail is useless. The body, the face, the eyes, the nose, the costume, the locality, etc., everything must contribute to the truth, or rather to reality. George Sand does not see a model, but her idea, her aspiration,⁶ despair,⁶ doubt; the
10 character is accessory. It is she that makes him act and speak, or rather it is the idea that she wishes to express.

Here is another⁷ characteristic detail. Balzac never forgets his characters. He carries them everywhere with him, even in real⁸ life, for⁹ he has created them so laboriously!
15 George Sand forgets almost immediately all that has come¹⁰ from her pen. It often happens to her to reread her books without recognizing them.¹¹ The reason is, that¹² events and characters, everything in her work, belongs to an¹³ ideal, abstract world. Imagination, a flash of¹³ sensibility, a¹³ revery, have created¹⁴ the work. But the state of
20 the soul changes; new emotions, other ideas, other aspirations fill it. Immediately these light, aerial beings, which hover between earth and sky, vanish in a kind of fantastic mist.¹⁵ One would like to retain them a moment, to keep
25 them,¹⁶ to recall them. But alas!¹⁷ the poet¹⁸ who has created¹⁴ them does not recognize them!

¹ sont-ils de. ² peut-on les réduire à n'exprimer que. ³ turn: 'some shadows (*ombres*, f.) pure, floating, and luminous.' ⁴ à. ⁵ atteindre la ressemblance. ⁶ repeat son. ⁷ here is another; autre. ⁸ réel; after the noun. ⁹ omit this word. ¹⁰ sortir. ¹¹ de se relire sans se reconnaître. ¹² c'est que. ¹³ use definite article. ¹⁴ donner naissance à. ¹⁵ turn: 'immediately vanish in a kind of mist fantastic, these beings light, aerial, which hover between sky and earth. ¹⁶ retain . . . keep them; *les arrêter un instant, les fixer au passage*. ¹⁷ quoi! ¹⁸ add lui-même.

VOCABULARY

Note.—This vocabulary is intended to contain all the words that occur in the exercises on grammar and syntax, and in the selections for translation, except the following classes: 1st, personal (including reflexive) pronouns; 2d, proper names (whose gender is not needed) that are exactly alike in the two languages; 3d, words that are translated in the footnotes.

In many vocabularies, certain phrases or combinations reappear under different headings; thus, the pupil finds the French for *as much as* or *as soon as* under *as*, and again under *much* or under *soon*. Also, in English compound verbs, like *go up*, *come in*, *begin again*, etc., the French equivalents are given under *go*, *come*, *begin*, and repeated under *up*, *in*, *again*. This plan has not been adopted in the following vocabulary, in which a large number of such combinations occur. Therefore, in all phrases having a common introductory word, the student must look for the French meaning under the distinctive word in the group; as, for instance, under *much* or *soon* in the examples given above.

In combinations of verbs and prepositions, the French will be found under the verb only; in compound nouns or other cases, preference was given to the word that seemed the most important for grammatical or other reasons.

After French verbs and adjectives that can be used with a dependent infinitive, will be found, in brackets, the preposition that serves as a connective, as "*invite*, inviter [à]," "*happy*, heureux [de]"; it should be remembered that these prepositions are to be used *before an infinitive*. If the verb takes an indirect object, the preposition *à* immediately follows it; thus, "*advise*, conseiller à [de]." In other cases of the use of prepositions after verbs and adjectives, the French preposition will be found enclosed in the ordinary marks of parenthesis, as, "*congratulate*, féliciter (de)," "*astounded*, émerveillé (de)." This is done only when the prepositions to be used differ in the two languages, or when they are required in French and not in English.

Irregular French nouns, adjectives, and verbs are marked. French verbs whose auxiliary is *être* are preceded by a star, as, "*arrive*, *arriver"; but reflexive verbs, which are always conjugated with *être*, are not marked. "Aspirate *h*" is indicated by a dagger before the letter, as, "*hero*, †héros."

The following abbreviations are used:—

<i>adj.</i> = adjective.	<i>irr.</i> = irregular.
<i>adv.</i> = adverb.	<i>m.</i> = masculine.
<i>art.</i> = article.	<i>n.</i> = noun.
<i>conj.</i> = conjunction.	<i>pl.</i> = plural.
<i>def.</i> = definite.	<i>prep.</i> = preposition.
<i>dem.</i> = demonstrative.	<i>pron.</i> = pronoun.
<i>f.</i> = feminine.	<i>rel.</i> = relative.
<i>indef.</i> = indefinite.	<i>sing.</i> = singular.
<i>int.</i> = interrogative.	<i>vb.</i> = verb.

VOCABULARY.

a, un, une.
abandon, abandonner.
able : **be able, pouvoir** [*no prep.*], *irr.*
about (*prep.*), vers ; sur (*concerning*).
above (*prep.*), au-dessus de ; **above all**, surtout.
absence of mind, distraction, f.
absent, absent ; absent-minded, dis-
trait.
absorb, absorber.
abstain, s'abstenir, irr.
abstract, abstrait.
abstraction, abstraction, f.
absurd, absurde.
abundance, abondance, f.
abuse (*vb.*), abuser (de).
abuse (*n.*), abus, *m.*
Academician, Académicien, m.
Academy, Académie, f.
accept, accepter.
accepted (*adj.*), approuvé.
accession, avènement, m.
accessory, accessoire.
acclamation, acclamation, f.
accompany, accompagner.
accomplished (*adj.*), accompli.
according to, selon.
account : on account of, à cause de.
accuse, accuser.

accustom, accoutumer ; to accustom one's self, s'accoutumer.
accustomed (*adj.*), accoutumé [à].
acquaintance, connaissance, f.
acquire, acquérir, irr.
act, agir.
action, action, f.
actor, acteur, m., irr.
add, ajouter ; to add up, additionner.
address one's self, s'adresser.
address (*n.*), adresse, *f.*
admirable, admirable.
admirably, admirablement.
admiration, admiration, f.
admire, admirer.
admirer, admirateur, m., irr.
admit, admettre, irr.
adopt, adopter.
adore, adorer.
adorn, garnir (de).
advance, avance, f.
advantage, bien, m. ; avantage, m.
adventure, aventure, f.
adversary, adversaire, m.
adversity, adversité, f.
advice, avis, m. ; conseil, m.
advise, conseiller à [de] ; engager [à].
aerial, aérien, irr.
affair, affaire, f.
affection, affection, f. ; maternal affection, amour de mère, m.

- affectionate**, affectueux, *irr.*
affirm, affirmer.
affright, épouvante, *f.*
afraid: to be afraid, avoir peur, *irr.*; craindre, *irr.*
Africa, Afrique, *f.*
after, après.
afternoon, après-midi, *m.* or *f.*
again, encore.
against, contre.
age, âge, *m.*; old age, vieillesse, *f.*
agitate, agiter.
agony, agonie, *f.*
agreeable, agréable.
agriculture, agriculture, *f.*
ah, ah.
aid, aider.
air, air, *m.*
alas, hélas.
Alexander, Alexandre.
all (*adj.*), tout, *irr.*
all (*pron.*), tout, tous, toute, toutes; **all** = *everything*, tout.
all (*adv.*), tout, toute, toutes; **not at all**, nullement.
allow, permettre à [de], *irr.*
ally, allié, *m.*
almost, presque.
alone, seul.
aloud, tout haut.
already, déjà.
also, aussi.
although, bien que, *subjunctive*; quoique, *subjunctive*.
always, toujours.
ambassador, ambassadeur, *m.*, *irr.*
ambiguous, ambigu, *irr.*
ambition, ambition, *f.*
America, Amérique, *f.*; **North America**, Amérique du nord; **South America**, Amérique du sud.
amiable, aimable.
- among**, parmi.
amuse, amuser; to amuse one's self, s'amuser.
an, un, une.
ancestor, aïeul, *m.*, *irr.*; ancêtre, *m.*
ancient, ancien, *irr.*; the ancients, les anciens, *m. pl.*
and, et.
anecdote, anecdote, *f.*
angel, ange, *m.*
angry: to be or get angry, se fâcher; to make angry, fâcher.
animal, animal, *m.*, *irr.*
annihilate, anéantir.
another, un autre, une autre; one another, se; another = one more, de plus (*after the noun*).
answer (*vb.*), répondre (à).
answer (*n.*), réponse, *f.*
antiquity, antiquité, *f.*
anxiety, anxiété, *f.*
any (*adj.*), de + definite article; quelque (*emphatic*); with negation, ne . . . pas de; aucun (*emphatic*); **any** = *every, all*, tout, toute; **any** = *any kind of*, quelconque (*after the noun*).
any (*pron.*), aucun, aucune (*with negation*); en (*with negation*).
anybody, quelqu'un, *m.*; with negation, personne, *m.*; **not anybody**, ne . . . personne.
any one, quelqu'un, *m.*; with negation, personne, *m.*
anything, quelque chose, *m.*; with negation, rien, *m.*; **not anything**, ne . . . rien.
apartment, appartement, *m.*
apology, excuse, *f.*
apostrophe, apostrophe, *f.*
appear, paraître, *irr.*
appearance, apparition, *f.*; **external appearance**, extérieur, *m.*

- appetite, appétit, *m.*
 applaud, battre des mains, *irr.*; applaudir.
 apply, s'adresser; to apply one's self, s'appliquer.
 appoint, nommer.
 appreciate, apprécier.
 approach, approcher.
 approbation, approbation, *f.*
 April, avril.
 Arab, Arabe, *m.*
 architect, architecte, *m.*
 ardor, ardeur, *f.*
 arithmetic, arithmétique, *f.*
 arm, bras, *m.*
 army, armée, *f.*
 around (*prep.*), autour de.
 arraign, traduire, *irr.*
 arrange, arranger.
 arrangement, arrangement, *m.*
 arrival, arrivée, *f.*
 arrive, *arriver [*no prep.*].
 art, art, *m.*
 artillery, artillerie, *f.*
 artisan, artisan, *m.*
 artist, artiste, *m.*
 artistic, artistique.
 as, comme; as . . . as, aussi . . . que; as it were, pour ainsi dire;
 as to or for, quant à; as well as, aussi bien que.
 ashamed (*adj.*), † honteux, *irr.*; to be ashamed, avoir † honte, *irr.*
 ashes, cendre, *f. sing.*
 Asia, Asie, *f.*
 ask, demander à [de].
 asleep: to fall asleep, s'endormir, *irr.*
 aspect, aspect, *m.*
 aspiration, aspiration, *f.*
 aspire, aspirer.
 assassin, assassin, *m.*; massacreur, *m.*
 assembled, assemblé.
 assembly, assemblée, *f.*
 assist, assister.
 assure, assurer.
 assuredly, assurément.
 astonishing, étonnant.
 astounded, émerveillé (de).
 astrologer, astrologue, *m.*
 astronomy, astronomie, *f.*
 at, à.
 attached (*adj.*), attaché.
 attachment, attachement, *m.*
 attack (*vb.*), attaquer.
 attack (*n.*), attaque, *f.*
 attain, atteindre (à), *irr.*
 attempt, tâcher [de].
 attend, suivre, *irr.* (a course); assister (à).
 attention, attention, *f.*
 attentive, attentif, *irr.*
 attest, attester.
 attitude, attitude, *f.*
 attract, attirer.
 attraction, agrément, *m.*
 attractive, agréable.
 audacity, audace, *f.*
 audience, auditeurs, *m. pl.*
 August, août.
 aunt, tante, *f.*
 Austria, Autriche, *f.*
 Austrian, autrichien, *irr.*
 author, auteur, *m.*
 authorize, autoriser [à].
 avarice, avarice, *f.*
 avenge, venger; to avenge one's self, se venger.
 avoid, fuir, *irr.*
 await, attendre.
 awake, éveiller (*transitive*); to awake, se réveiller; s'éveiller (*intransitive*).
 awakened, réveillé.
 awakening (*n.*), réveil, *m.*
 awful, sinistre.

- bad, mauvais; méchant; **it is too bad**, c'est dommage, *subjunctive*.
 badly, mal.
 bag, sac, *m*.
 ball, bal, *m.*; balle, *f.* (*sphere*).
 ballad, ballade, *f*.
 band, bande, *f*.
 banter, railler.
 barbarian, barbare, *m*.
 bare, nu.
 basket, panier, *m*.
 battle, bataille, *f*.
 be, être, *irr.*; **to be to**, devoir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; **to be better**, valoir mieux [*no prep.*], *irr.*, *impersonal*; **to be damp**, faire humide [*no prep.*], *irr.*, *impersonal*; **to be proper**, convenir, *irr.*, *impersonal*; **it may be**, il se peut, *subjunctive*.
 bear, porter; **to bear or bear with**, supporter (*endure*).
 bearing, démarche, *f*.
 beast, bête, *f*.
 beat, battre, *irr*.
 beautiful (*adj.*), beau [*de*], *irr*
 beautiful (*n.*), beau, *m*.
 beauty, beauté, *f*.
 because, parce que.
 become, *devenir, *irr.*; **become again**, *redevenir, *irr*.
 bed, lit, *m*.
 before (*prep.*), devant, *denoting place*; avant, *denoting time*; *before infinitive*, avant de.
 before (*conj.*), avant que.
 beg, prier [*de*].
 beget, enfanter.
 begin, commencer [*à*]; **begin again**, recommencer [*à*].
 behave, se conduire, *irr*.
 behind, derrière.
 behold, assister (*à*).
 being (*n.*), être, *m*.
 believe, croire, *irr*.
 belong, appartenir, *irr*.
 beloved, bien-aimé.
 below, au-dessous; **here below**, ici-bas.
 beneath, au-dessous de.
 benumbed, engourdi (*par*).
 bequeath, léguer.
 besides, outre.
 besiege, assiéger.
 best (*adj.*), meilleur.
 best (*adv.*), le mieux.
 bestow upon, rendre (*à*).
 betake one's self, se rendre.
 bethink one's self, s'aviser.
 betray, trahir.
 betrothed, fiancé, *m*.
 better (*adj.*), meilleur.
 better (*adv.*), mieux.
 between, entre.
 beyond, au delà de; **beyond words**, au-dessus des paroles.
 Bible, Bible, *f*.
 big, gros, *irr*.
 bill, compte, *m*.
 bind, lier.
 bird, oiseau, *m.*, *irr*.
 birth, naissance, *f*.
 bishop, évêque, *m*.
 bishopric, évêché, *m*.
 bite one's nails, se ronger les ongles.
 bitter, amer, *irr*.
 bitterly, amèrement.
 bitterness, amertume, *f*.
 blade, lame, *f*.
 bless, bénir.
 blessing (*n.*), bien, *m*.
 blind, aveugler.
 block, bloc, *m*.
 bloody, sanglant.
 blow, coup, *m*.
 blue (*adj.*), bleu.
 blue (*n.*), bleu, *m*.

bluntness, brusquerie, *f.*
 boast, se vanter.
 boat, bateau, *m.*, *irr.*; canot, *m.*
 body, corps, *m.*
 bold, hardi.
 bolt, verrou, *m.*
 bond, lien, *m.*
 book, livre, *m.*
 border upon, toucher (*à*).
 bore, ennuyer.
 born : to be born, *naître, *irr.*
 born, né.
 borrow, emprunter.
 both, l'un et l'autre; tous deux, toutes deux.
 bottom : at the bottom, au bas.
 bound : at a bound, d'un élan.
 boundless, démesuré; fou, *irr.*
 bouquet, bouquet, *m.*
 bourgeois, bourgeois, *m.*
 bow : court bow, révérence, *f.*
 bowl, coupe, *f.*
 box, boîte, *f.*
 boy, garçon, *m.*; errand boy, commissionnaire, *m.*
 branch, branche, *f.*
 brave, brave.
 bread, pain, *m.*; loaf of bread, pain.
 break, casser.
 breathe, respirer.
 brevity, brièveté, *f.*
 brief, bref, *irr.*
 brigand, brigand, *m.*
 bright, spirituel, *irr.*
 brilliant, brillant.
 bring, apporter (*a thing*); bring, amener (*a person*); bring back, rapporter (*a thing*); bring back, ramener (*a person*); bring out, faire ressortir, *irr.*; bring up, élever.
 Brittany, Bretagne, *f.*
 broad, large.

brother, frère, *m.*
 brother-in-law, beau-frère, *m.*
 brusque, brusque.
 brutal, brutal, *irr.*
 budding, en bouton.
 build, bâtir; construire, *irr.*
 bunch, botte, *f.*
 burgher, bourgeois, *m.*
 Burgundy, Bourgogne, *f.*
 buried, plongé (*figuratively*).
 burn, brûler.
 burning (*adj.*), brûlant.
 bury, enterrer; to bury one's self, s'enfoncer.
 bush, buisson, *m.*
 but (*conj.*), mais.
 but (*adv.*), ne . . . que.
 buy, acheter.
 by, par; de (*after expressions of emotions*).
 cabbage, chou, *m.*, *irr.*
 cake, gâteau, *m.*, *irr.*
 call, appeler.
 calm, calme, *m.*
 camp, bivouaquer.
 campaign, campagne, *f.*
 can (= *be able*), pouvoir [*no prep.*], *irr.*
 Canada : Upper Canada, †haut Canada, *m.*
 canal, canal, *m.*, *irr.*
 canary, serin, *m.*
 candidate, candidat, *m.*
 capable, capable.
 capital, capitale, *f.*
 caprice, caprice, *m.*
 capricious, capricieux, *irr.*
 captain, capitaine, *m.*
 captivate, captiver.
 captivated (*adj.*), séduit.
 captivity, captivité, *f.*
 card, carte, *f.*

cardinal, cardinal, *m.*, *irr.*
 care, soin, *m.*
 carnival, carnaval, *m.*
 carp, carpe, *f.*
 carriage, voiture, *f.*
 carry, porter; carry off, remporter
 (*of a victory*).
 case: in case, en cas que, *subjunc-*
tive; au cas que, *subjunctive*.
 Castile, Castille, *f.*
 castle, château, *m.*
 cat, chat, *m.*
 catch, prendre, *irr.*
 cathedral, cathédrale, *f.*
 Catholic, catholique; to become
 a Catholic, se faire catholique,
irr.
 cause (*vb.*), causer.
 cause (*n.*), cause, *f.*
 cavalier, cavalier, *m.*
 cease, cesser [de].
 ceasing: without ceasing, sans
 cesse.
 celebrated (*adj.*), célèbre.
 celebrity, célébrité, *f.*
 censor, censeur, *m.*
 cent, sou, *m.*
 centre (*vb.*), se passer.
 century, siècle, *m.*
 ceremony, cérémonie, *f.*
 certain, certain.
 certainly, sûrement; certainement.
 chain, chaîne, *f.*
 chair, chaire, *f.* (*in a college*).
 challenge, défi, *m.*
 chance, † hasard, *m.*
 change, changer.
 chaos, chaos, *m.*
 chapter, chapitre, *m.*
 character, caractère, *m.*; character,
 personnage, *m.* (*in fiction*).
 characteristic (*n.*), caractéristique,
m.

characteristic (*adj.*), caractéris-
 tique.
 charge, charger [de].
 charity, charité, *f.*
 Charles the Bad, Charles le Mauvais.
 charm (*vb.*), charmer.
 charm (*n.*), charme, *m.*
 charmed (*adj.*), charmé (de).
 charming (*adj.*), charmant.
 chat, deviser.
 cheap, à bon marché.
 cheek, joue, *f.*
 cheerful, gai.
 cherry, cerise, *f.*
 chicken, poulet, *m.*
 chief, chef, *m.*
 child, enfant, *m.* or *f.*
 childhood, enfance, *f.*
 chimney, cheminée, *f.*
 choice, choix, *m.*
 choose, choisir.
 Christian, chrétien, *irr.*
 church, église, *f.*
 churchmen, gens d'église, *m. pl.*
 Cicero, Cicéron.
 circumstance, circonstance, *f.*
 city, ville, *f.*
 civil, civil.
 civilized (*adj.*), civilisé.
 clad, vêtu (de).
 claim, réclamer.
 classic, antique.
 claw, griffe, *f.*
 clean, nettoyer.
 clear, clair.
 clearness, clareté, *f.*
 clever, habile.
 cleverly, ingénieusement.
 climate, température, *f.*
 climb, grimper (à).
 clock: three o'clock, trois heures.
 close (*vb.*), fermer, *transitive*; se
 fermer, *intransitive*.

close (*adj.*), intime; close to, tout
 cloth, drap, *m.* [près de.
 clothes, habits, *m. pl.*
 cloud, nuage, *m.*
 coal, charbon, *m.*
 coarse, grossier, *irr.*
 coat, habit, *m.*
 coax, câliner.
 coffee, café, *m.*
 cold (*adj.*), froid.
 cold (*n.*), froid, *m.*
 coldly, froidement.
 collection, magasin, *m.*
 college, collège, *m.*
 colonel, colonel, *m.*
 color, couleur, *f.*
 coloring (*n.*), coloris, *m.*
 combat, combat, *m.*
 combination, assemblage, *m.*
 come, *venir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; come
 back, *revenir [*no prep.*], *irr.*;
 come down, *descendre; come
 home, *rentrer; come in, *entrer
 chez; come out, *sortir [*no
 prep.*], *irr.*; come up, *survenir,
irr.; come after or come to get,
 *venir chercher, *irr.*
 comedian, comédien, *m., irr.*
 comedy, comédie, *f.*
 comet, comète, *f.*
 comfort, consoler (*de*).
 comfortably, à l'aise.
 comical, plaisant.
 command (*vb.*), commander à [*de*].
 command (*n.*), commandement, *m.*
 commander, commandant, *m.*
 commence, commencer.
 commentary, commentaire, *m.*
 commerce, commerce, *m.*
 common: in common, en commun.
 commonplace, commun; vulgaire.
 companion, compagnon, *m.*; com-
 paigne, *f.*

company, compagnie, *f.*
 comparable, comparable.
 compare, comparer.
 compassion, compassion, *f.*
 compassionate, compatissant.
 complain, se plaindre, *irr.*
 complete (*vb.*), compléter.
 complete (*adj.*), complet, *irr.*
 completely, complètement.
 complex, combiné.
 compliment, compliment, *m.*
 compose, composer.
 composer, compositeur, *m.*
 composition, composition, *f.*
 comptroller, contrôleur, *m.*
 conceive, concevoir, *irr.*
 concentrate, réunir (*en*).
 conception, conception, *f.*
 concert, concert, *m.*
 conciliatory, conciliateur, *irr.*
 conclude, terminer.
 condemn, condamner.
 condemnation, condamnation, *f.*
 condition, condition, *f.*; on condi-
 tion that, à condition que, *sub-
 junctive.*
 conduct (*vb.*), conduire, *irr.*; to con-
 duct one's self, se conduire, *irr.*
 conduct (*n.*), conduite, *f.*
 confess, avouer.
 confession, aveu, *m.*
 confidence, confiance, *f.*
 confound, confondre.
 confounded (*adj.*), confondu.
 confused, troublé; to become con-
 fused, s'embrouiller.
 congratulate, féliciter (*de*).
 conjugal, conjugal, *irr.*
 conquer, subjuguier.
 conscience, conscience, *f.*
 consciousness, connaissance, *f.*; to
 lose consciousness, perdre con-
 naissance.

- consecrate, consacrer.
 consecrated (*adj.*), sacré (*of kings*).
 consent (*vb.*), consentir, *irr.*
 consent (*n.*), consentement, *m.*
 consequence, conséquence, *f.*
 consider, considérer.
 considerable, considérable.
 consideration, considération, *f.*
 consist, se composer.
 consistent, logique.
 constable, connétable, *m.*
 constantly, constamment.
 consult, consulter.
 contain, renfermer.
 contemplate, contempler.
 contemplator, contemplateur, *m.*
 contemporary, contemporain.
 contempt, mépris, *m.*
 content one's self, se contenter (*de*).
 content (*adj.*), content.
 contents, contenu, *m. sing.*
 continue, continuer [*de*].
 contrary, contraire.
 contribute, concourir, *irr.*
 Convention, Convention, *f.*
 conversation, conversation, *f.*
 converse with, entretenir, *irr.*
 convince, convaincre, *irr.*
 coolness, fraîcheur, *f.*
 copy, copier.
 coquetry, coquetterie, *f.*
 coquette, coquette, *f.*
 coquettish, coquet, *irr.*
 coral, corail, *m., irr.*
 cordial, cordial, *m.*
 correct, corriger; to correct one's self, se corriger.
 correspondence, correspondance, *f.*
 corrupt, corrompre.
 Corsican, corse.
 cost, coûter.
 costume, costume, *m.*
- cottage, chaumière, *f.*
 cotton, coton, *m.*
 counsel, conseil, *m.*
 count (*vb.*), compter.
 count (*n.*), comte, *m.*
 countess, comtesse, *f.*
 country, patrie, *f. (native land)*; campagne, *f. (opposed to city)*; pays, *m.*
 courage, courage, *m.*
 course, cours, *m.*
 court, cour, *f.*; the courts, les tribunaux, *m. pl.*; court bow, révérence, *f.*
 courtier, courtisan, *m.*
 cousin, cousin, *m.*
 cover, couvrir (*de*), *irr.*
 covered (*adj.*), couvert (*de*).
 cow, vache, *f.*
 cradle, berceau, *m., irr.*
 create, créer.
 creator, créateur, *m., irr.*
 creature, créature, *f.*
 creep, ramper.
 crime, crime, *m.*
 critic, critique, *m.*
 critical, décisif, *irr.*
 criticism, critique, *f.*
 cross (*vb.*), franchir.
 cross (*n.*), croix, *f.*
 crown (*vb.*), couronner.
 crown (*n.*), couronne, *f.*
 cruel, cruel, *irr.*
 cry (*vb.*), s'écrier (*exclaim*).
 cry (*n.*), cri, *m.*
 cultivate, cultiver.
 cultivation, culture, *f.*
 cup, coupe, *f.*
 cure, guérir.
 curiously, curieusement.
 cushion, coussin, *m.*
 custom, usage, *m.*
 cut, coupure, *f.*

- damage, dommage, *m.*
 damp, humide.
 dance, danser.
 danger, danger, *m.*
 dangerous, périlleux, *irr.*; dangereux, *irr.*
 dare, oser [*no prep.*].
 darken, assombrir.
 daughter, fille, *f.*
 dauphin, dauphin, *m.*
 day, jour, *m.* (*considered as a unit*);
 ournée, f. (considered in all its
 parts); the day before, la veille;
 the next day, le lendemain;
 one day after a, le lendemain
 d'un; Easter Day, le jour de
 Pâques.
 daylight: in broad daylight, en
 plein jour.
 dazzle, éblouir.
 dead, mort.
 deal (*vb.*), entrer en rapports.
 deal: a good or a great deal, beau-
 coup (de).
 dear, cher, *irr.*
 death, mort, *f.*
 death-bed, lit de mort, *m.*
 deceased (*n.*), défunt, *m.*
 deceitful, trompeur, *irr.*
 deceive, tromper.
 decide, décider.
 decision, décision, *f.*
 declare, déclarer; affirmer; to de-
 clare one's self, se déclarer.
 deed, action, *f.*
 deep, vif, *irr.*
 defeat (*vb.*), battre, *irr.*
 defeat (*n.*), défaite, *f.*
 defend, défendre; to defend one's
 self, se défendre.
 deformity, difformité, *f.*
 degenerate, dégénérer.
 degrade, dégrader.
 delicacies, finesse, *f. pl.*
 delicacy, finesse, *f.*
 delicate, délicat.
 delicately, délicatement.
 delicious, délicieux, *irr.*
 delighted (*adj.*), enchanté (de).
 deliver, délivrer.
 delude: delude one's self about, se
 faire des illusions sur, *irr.*
 Demosthenes, Demosthènes.
 dense, épais, *irr.*
 deny, nier; disconvenir (de), *irr.*
 depart, *partir, *irr.*
 departure, départ, *m.*
 depend, dépendre (de); compter
 (sur).
 dependent, dépendant.
 depress, attrister.
 depth, profondeur, *f.*; in the depth
 of, au fond de.
 descend, *descendre.
 describe, décrire, *irr.*
 description, description, *f.*
 descriptive, descriptif, *irr.*
 deserve, mériter [de].
 desire (*vb.*), désirer; to have a
 great desire, avoir envie de, *irr.*
 desire (*n.*), désir, *m.*
 desk, bureau, *m., irr.*
 despair, désespoir, *m.*
 despise, mépriser.
 destined, destiné.
 destiny, destin, *m.*; destinée, *f.*
 destroy, détruire, *irr.*
 detach, détacher.
 detail, détail, *m.*
 develop, développer.
 development, développement, *m.*
 Devil's Pool, Mare-au-Diable, *f.*
 devoid, dépourvu.
 devote, consacrer; to devote one's
 self, se livrer; se consacrer.
 devour, dévorer.

- devout: devout people, des dévots,**
m. pl.
diamond, diamant, m.
dictate, dicter.
dictionary, dictionnaire, m.
die, *mourir, irr.
difference, différence, f.
different, différent.
difficulty, difficile [à].
difficulty, difficulté, f.
dignity, dignité, f.
dine, dîner.
dining room, salle à manger, f.
dinner, dîner, m.
dint: by dint of, à force de.
directly, tout à l'heure.
disappear, disparaître, irr.
discipline, discipliner.
discontented: to be discontented,
s'ennuyer.
discourage, décourager.
discourse, discours, m.
discover, découvrir, irr.
discreet, avisé.
disdain, dédaigner [de].
disease, maladie, f.
disguise (vb.), déguiser.
disguise (n.), déguisement, m.
disgust, dégouter (de).
dismiss, congédier.
disposition, disposition, f.; an even
disposition, l'humeur égale.
dissipated (adj.), dissipé.
distaff full, quenouillée, f.
distance, distance, f.
distinguish, distinguer.
distinguished (adj.), distingué.
disturb, déranger.
ditch, fossé, m.
divert, divertir; to divert one's
self, se divertir.
divide, diviser.
divine, divin.
- Divinity, Divinité, f.**
divorce, divorce, m.; divorce suit,
procès, m.
do, faire, irr.; do, used as auxiliary,
is not to be translated; to do with-
out, se passer de.
docile, docile.
doctor, médecin, m.; docteur, m.
document, document, m.
dog, chien, m.
door, porte, f.
doorway, enfoncement, m.
dotted, émaillé (de).
doubt (vb.), douter.
doubt (n.), doute, m.; beyond
doubt, hors de doute.
doubtless, sans doute.
down to, jusqu'à.
dozen, douzaine, f.
drag on, se prolonger.
dramatic, dramatique.
draw, tirer.
drawing-room, salon, m.
dread, redouter.
dreadful, redoutable.
dream (vb.), rêver.
dream (n.), songe, m.
dreamer, rêveur, m.
dress one's self, s'habiller.
dress (n.), robe, f.
dressed (adj.), habillé.
drink, boire, irr.
drive, conduire, irr.; drive away
from, chasser de.
drop (vb.), *tomber.
drop (n.), goutte, f.
drown, étouffer.
drum, tambour, m.
dry (adj.), sec, irr.
dry one's self, se sécher; to dry
up, tarir.
Duchess, duchesse, f.
due, dû.

duel, duel, *m.*
 duellist, duelliste, *m.*
 duke, duc, *m.*
 Duke of Savoy, duc de Savoie.
 during, pendant.
 duty, devoir, *m.*

 each, chaque; each one, chacun,
 chacune; each other, l'un, l'autre,
 l'une, l'autre; *se.*
 ear, oreille, *f.*
 Earl, comte, *m.*
 early, de bonne heure; so early, de
 si bonne heure.
 earn, gagner.
 earth, terre, *f.*
 easily, aisément.
 easy, facile [à]; aisé [de].
 eat, manger.
 edition, édition, *f.*
 educated: well educated, instruit.
 education, éducation, *f.*
 efface, effacer.
 effect, effet, *m.*
 effort, effort, *m.*
 Egypt, Egypte, *f.*
 Egyptian, Égyptien, *irr.*
 eight, huit.
 eighteen, dix-huit.
 eldest, aîné.
 elect, élire, *irr.*
 election, élection, *f.*
 elegance, élégance, *f.*
 elegant, élégant.
 element, élément, *m.*
 elephant, éléphant, *m.*
 eleven, onze.
 Elizabeth, Élisabeth.
 eloquence, éloquence, *f.*; forensic
 eloquence, éloquence du barreau.
 eloquent, éloquent.
 elsewhere, autre part.
 embark, s'embarquer.

embody, incarner.
 embrace, embrasser.
 eminently, éminemment.
 emotion, émotion, *f.*
 emperor, empereur, *m.*
 emphatic, expressif, *irr.*
 employ, employer.
 empress, impératrice, *f.*
 enamel, émail, *m.*, *irr.*
 encamped (*adj.*), campé.
 enchant, enchanter.
 encounter, rencontre, *f.*
 encourage, encourager.
 end (*vb.*), finir; terminer.
 end (*n.*), bout, *m.* (*extremity*); fin,
 f. (*termination*); at the end, au
 bout.
 ended (*adj.*), terminé.
 endow, douer; dote (*an institu-*
 tion).
 endowed (*adj.*), doué (*de*)
 endure, supporter.
 enemy, ennemi, *m.*
 energy, énergie, *f.*
 engagement, engagement, *m.*
 England, Angleterre, *f.*
 English (*n.*), Anglais, *m.*
 English (*adj.*), anglais.
 Englishman, Anglais, *m.*
 enjoy, jouir (*de*); to enjoy one's
 self, s'amuser.
 enlarge, grandir.
 enlighten, éclairer.
 enliven, égayer.
 enormous, énorme.
 enough, assez (*de*); assez (*adv. of*
 degree); sure enough, en effet.
 enrich one's self, s'enrichir.
 enter, *entrer (*dans*).
 entertain, distraire, *irr.*
 entertained (*adj.*), content.
 entertainment, compagnie, *f.*
 enthusiasm, enthousiasme, *m.*

- enticed, mené.
 entire, entier, *irr.*
 entirely, entièrement; complètement.
 entitled, intitulé.
 entreat, supplier.
 entrust, confier.
 envious, envieux, *irr.*
 envy (*vb.*), envier.
 envy (*n.*), envie, *f.*
 epitaph, épitaphe, *f.*
 equal (*vb.*), égal.
 equal (*adj.*), égal, *irr.*
 equipped, équipé.
 errand, commission, *f.*
 error, erreur, *f.*
 escapade, escapade, *f.*
 escape (*vb.*), échapper (*à*), *transitive*;
 escape = *to run away*, se sauver.
 especially, surtout.
 essay, essai, *m.*
 establishment, établissement, *m.*
 esteem, estimer.
 eternal, éternel, *irr.*
 eulogy, éloges, *m. pl.*
 euphonious, sonore.
 Europe, Europe, *f.*
 European, Européen, *irr.*
 evasive, évasif, *irr.*
 even (*adj.*), même.
 even (*adv.*), même.
 evening, soir, *m.*
 event, événement, *m.*
 ever, jamais; forever, à jamais;
 without verb, toujours.
 every, chaque; every = *all*, tout,
 tous, toute, toutes; every even-
 ing, tous les soirs.
 everybody, tout le monde.
 every one, chacun.
 everything, tout, *m.*
 everywhere, partout.
- evidence, apparence, *f.*
 evident, évident.
 evil (*n.*), mal, *irr.*
 evil (*adj.*), mauvais.
 exactly, justement; exactement.
 examine, examiner.
 excel, dépasser.
 excellent, excellent.
 excepted (*adj.*), excepté.
 exceptional, exceptionnel, *irr.*
 excesses, désordres, *m. pl.*
 excite, exciter.
 exclaim, s'écrier.
 excuse one's self, s'excuser [*de*]
 se dispenser [*de*].
 excuse (*n.*), excuse, *f.*
 execution, exécution, *f.*
 executioner, bourreau, *m., irr.*
 exempt, exempt (*de*).
 exercise (*vb.*), exercer.
 exercise (*n.*), devoir, *m.*
 exert, exercer (*sur*).
 exhale, exhaler.
 exhaust, épuiser.
 exist, exister.
 existence, existence, *f.*
 expect, attendre.
 expedition, expédition, *f.*
 expense, dépense, *f.*
 expensive, coûteux, *irr.*
 experience, éprouver.
 expire, expirer.
 explain, expliquer.
 exploit, exploit, *m.*
 explore, explorer.
 express, exprimer; to express one's
 self, s'exprimer.
 expression, expression, *f.*
 expressive, expressif, *irr.*
 exquisite, délicieux, *irr.*; exquis.
 extraordinary, extraordinaire.
 extravagance, extravagance, *f.*
 extreme, extrême.

eye, œil, *m.*, *irr.*
eyebrow, sourcil, *m.*

fable, fable, *f.*
face, figure, *f.*; visage, *m.*
facility, facilité, *f.*
fact, fait, *m.*
faculty, faculté, *f.*
fade, se faner; se flétrir.
faded (*adj.*), fané.
fail, manquer [de].
faith, foi, *f.*
faithful, fidèle.
fall, *tomber.
fallen (*adj.*), tombé.
familiar, familier, *irr.*; **familiar**
 footing, pied de familiarité, *m.*
familiarity, familiarité, *f.*
family, famille, *f.*; of good family,
 de bonne maison.
famished (*adj.*), affamé.
famous, fameux, *irr.*
fanaticism, fanatisme, *m.*
fantastic, fantastique.
far, loin.
far from (*conj.*), loin que, *subjunc-*
 tive.
farce, farce, *f.*
farm, ferme, *f.*
farmer, fermier, *m.*
fascinating, entraînant.
fashion, mode, *f.*
fashionable, à la mode.
fast, vite.
fate, sort, *m.*
father, père, *m.*
father-in-law, beau-père, *m.*
fatigue, fatigue, *f.*
fault, défaut, *m.* (*of character*);
 faute, *f.* (*of conduct*).
favor, faveur, *f.*
favorite, préféré, *m.*; favori, *m.*
fear (*vb.*), craindre [de], *irr.*

fear (*n.*), crainte, *f.*
fear: for fear that, de peur que,
 subjunctive.
feast, festin, *m.*
feather, plume, *f.*
feature, trait, *m.*
February, février.
fecundity, fécondité, *f.*
feel, sentir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; se sentir,
 irr., *intransitive*; ressentir, *irr.*
 (*of emotions*); éprouver (*of emo-*
 tions).
feign, feindre, *irr.*
fellow-student, condisciple, *m.*
fertile, fertile.
fertilize, féconder.
few, peu (de); a few, quelques.
fickle, inconstant.
field, champ, *m.*
fifteen, quinze.
fifty, cinquante.
fight (*vb.*), se battre, *irr.*; com-
 battre, *irr.*; livrer (*a battle*).
fight (*n.*), bataille, *f.*
figure, image, *f.*
filial, filial, *irr.*
fill, remplir (de).
filled (*adj.*), rempli (de).
final, suprême.
finally, enfin.
finance, finance, *f.*
financier, financier, *m.*
find, trouver.
fine, beau, *irr.*
finish, finir.
fire, feu, *m.*, *irr.*
fireside: by the fireside, au coin
firmness, fermeté, *f.* [du feu].
first (*adj.*), premier, *irr.*
first (*adv.*), d'abord; at first, d'abord;
 from the first, dès l'abord.
fish, poisson, *m.*
five, cinq.

- fix, fixer.
 flash, transport, *m.*
 flat, plat.
 flatter, flatter.
 flatterer, flatteur, *m., irr.*
 flattery, flatterie, *f.*
 flexible, flexible.
 floating (*adj.*), flottant.
 floor, plancher, *m.*
 Florentine, Florentin, *m.*
 flower, fleur, *f.*
 fog, brouillard, *m.*
 foible, défaut, *m.*
 follow, suivre, *irr.*
 following, suivant.
 fond : to be fond of, aimer.
 food, mets, *m. pl.*
 fool, sot, *m., irr.*
 foolish, sot, *irr.*
 foot, pied, *m.*; on foot, à pied.
 for (*conj.*), car.
 for (*prep.*), pour; for = *during*, pendant.
 forbid, défendre à [de].
 force (*vb.*), forcer.
 force (*n.*), force, *f.*
 forebode, présager.
 forehead, front, *m.*
 foresee, prévoir, *irr.*
 forest, forêt, *f.*; in the heart of the forest, en pleine forêt.
 forever, à jamais.
 forget, oublier [de].
 forget-me-not, myosotis, *m.*
 forgive, pardonner (à).
 form (*vb.*), former.
 form (*n.*), forme, *f.*
 former, celui-là, celle-là, ceux-là, celles-là; former = *old*, ancien, formerly, autrefois. [*irr.*]
 fortune, fortune, *f.*; fortune = *property*, bien, *m.*
 forty, quarante.
 found, fonder.
 four, quatre.
 fourteenth, quatorzième.
 fourth, quatrième.
 fragile, fragile.
 fragrance, odeur, *f.*
 franc, franc, *m.*
 France, France, *f.*
 Francis I., François I^{er}
 frankly, franchement.
 frankness, franchise, *f.*
 free, libre.
 French (*n.*), Français, *m.*
 French (*adj.*), français.
 Frenchman, Français, *m.*
 frequent (*vb.*), fréquenter.
 fresh, frais, *irr.*
 friend, ami, *m.*
 friendship, amitié, *f.*
 frightened (*adj.*), effrayé.
 frightful, effrayant.
 from, de; from (= *a point of departure in time*), à partir de; dès.
 front : in front, devant.
 frost, frimas, *m.*
 frozen, glacé.
 fruit, fruit, *m.*
 fugitive, fugitif, *irr.*
 full, plein.
 fur, fourrure, *f.*
 fury, fureur, *f.*
 future (*n.*), avenir, *m.*
 future (*adj.*), futur.
 gallantry, galanterie, *f.*
 galop, galop, *m.*
 game, jeu, *m., irr.*; gibier, *m.* (*hunting term*).
 garden, jardin, *m.*
 garment, habit, *m.*
 gate, porte, *f.*
 gather, amasser.
 gay, joyeux, *irr.*

- gayly, gaïement.
 general, général, *m., irr.*
 generosity, générosité, *f.*
 genius, génie, *m.*
 gentle, doux, *irr.*
 gentleman, monsieur, *m., irr.*
 gentleness, douceur, *f.*
 geographer, géographe, *m.*
 German (*n.*), Allemand, *m.*
 gesture, geste, *m.*
 get up, se lever; to get away from, s'éloigner (*de*); to get tired, s'en-nuyer.
 gift, don, *m.*
 gifted (*adj.*), doué (*de*).
 girl, fille, *f.*
 give, donner; give = *hand to*, remettre (*à*), *irr.*; to give back, rendre; to give rise to, faire naître, *irr.*; give up, renoncer (*à*); to give up to, céder.
 glad, content (*de*); very glad, bien aise [*de*].
 gladly, volontiers.
 glass, verre, *m.*
 glide, glisser.
 glitter, reluire, *irr.*
 globe, globe, *m.*
 glorious, glorieux [*de*], *irr.*
 glory, gloire, *f.*
 glove, gant, *m.*
 go, *aller [*no prep.*], *irr.*; se rendre; to go = *to go away*, *partir [*no prep.*], *irr.*, *s'en aller, *irr.*; to go out, *sortir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; to go off, *partir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; to go away, *s'en aller, *irr.*; to go down, *descendre; to go down on one's knees, se mettre à genoux, *irr.*; to go away from, s'éloigner (*de*); to go up to, s'approcher (*de*); to go get, *aller chercher, *irr.*; to go home, *rentrer; to go to bed, se coucher; to go to sleep, s'endormir, *irr.*; to go ahead, prendre les devants, *irr.*
 goal, but, *m.*
 God, Dieu, *m.*
 gods, dieux, *m. pl.*
 gold, or, *m.*
 golden, doré.
 good (*adj.*), bon, *irr.*; sage (*of conduct*).
 good (*n.*), bien, *m.*
 good-by, adieu.
 goodness, bonté, *f.*
 Gospels, Évangiles, *m. pl.*
 Gothic, gothique.
 govern, gouverner.
 government, gouvernement, *m.*
 gown, robe, *f.*
 grace, grâce, *f.*
 graceful, gracieux, *irr.*
 gracious, gracieux, *irr.*
 gradually, peu à peu.
 grand, grand.
 grandfather, grand-père, *m.*
 grandmother, grand'mère, *f.*
 granite, granit, *m.*
 grate, grille, *f.*
 grateful, reconnaissant (*de*).
 gratitude, reconnaissance, *f.*; grati-tude, *f.*
 grave, grave.
 gravely, sérieusement.
 gray, gris.
 great, grand.
 greatness, grandeur, *f.*
 Greece, Grèce, *f.*
 Greek (*n.*), Grec, *m.*
 Greek (*adj.*), grec, *irr.*
 green, vert.
 groan, plainte, *f.*; gémissment, *m.*
 grotesque, grotesque.
 group, groupe, *m.*
 gruff, bourru.

- guest**, convive, *m.*
guidance, conduite, *f.*
guide (*vb.*), guider.
guide (*n.*), guide, *m.*
guilty, coupable.
- haberdasher**, mercier, *m.*
habit: to be in the habit, avoir l'habitude, *irr.*
habitual, habituel, *irr.*
hair, cheveux, *m. pl., irr.*
half (*adj.*), demi.
half (*n.*), moitié, *f.*
hall, salle, *f.*
hand (*vb.*), remettre (*à*), *irr.*
hand (*n.*), main, *f.*
handsome, beau, *irr.*
hang, pendre.
happen, *arriver; **happen**, *impersonal*, *arriver; to happen to, *venir à, *irr.*
happily, heureusement.
happiness, bonheur, *m.*
happy, heureux, *irr.*
hard (= *unfeeling*), insensible; **hard** (= *difficult*), difficile [*de*]; **dur** (*of a substance*); **rude** (*of a fight*).
hardly, à peine.
harmless, inoffensif, *irr.*
harmonious, harmonieux, *irr.*
harmony, harmonie, *f.*
harshly, durement; rudement.
harvest, récolte, *f.*; moisson, *f.*
haste: in haste, à la *†*hâte.
hasten, se *†*hâter [*de*]; s'empresseur [*de*].
hat, chapeau, *m., irr.*
hate, détester; *†*haïr, *irr.*
hatred, *†*haine, *f.*
have, avoir, *irr.*; to have to = to be obliged to, devoir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; falloir [*no prep.*], *irr., impersonal*; to have just, venir de, *irr.*
- hazy**, confus.
head, tête, *f.*
health, santé, *f.*
hear, entendre; to hear from, avoir des nouvelles de, *irr.*
heart, cœur, *m.*
heart-rending, déchirant.
heat, chaleur, *f.*
heaven, ciel, *m.*; cieux, *m. pl.*
heavenly, céleste.
heavy, pesant.
height, *†*hauteur, *f.*
heir, héritier, *m., irr.*
help (*vb.*), aider; **help** = to prevent, s'empêcher [*de*].
help (*n.*), aide, *f.*
helpful, secourable.
hem, bord, *m.*
henceforth, désormais.
Henry, Henri.
her, son, *irr.*
here, ici; **here is or here are**, voici.
hermit, ermite, *m.*
hero, *†*héros, *m.*
heroine, héroïne, *f.*
hers, le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes.
hesitate, hésiter [*à*].
hide, cacher; to hide one's self, se cacher.
high, *†*haut.
hire, louer.
his (*adj.*), son, *irr.*
his (*pron.*), le sien, la sienne, les siens, les siennes.
hold, tenir, *irr.*
hole, trou, *m.*
holiday, congé, *m.*
Holland, *†*Hollande, *f.*
home, foyer, *m.*; at home, à la maison; chez . . .
honest, honnête.
honor (*vb.*), honorer.

honor (*n.*), honneur, *m.*
 honorable, honorable.
 hook, hameçon, *m.*
 hope (*vb.*), espérer.
 hope (*n.*), espérance, *f.*
 horizon, horizon, *m.*
 horrible, horrible.
 horror, horreur, *f.*
 horse, cheval, *m.*, *irr.*; on horse-
 back, à cheval.
 horseman, cavalier, *m.*
 hospital, hôpital, *m.*, *irr.*
 hostess, hôtesse, *f.*
 hot, chaud.
 hour, heure, *f.* [chez.
 house, maison, *f.*; at the house of,
 household, ménage, *m.*
 hover, flotter.
 how, comment.
 however, pourtant; cependant.
 however (*adv.*), quelque.
 human, humain; human beings,
 les humains, *m. pl.*
 humble, humble.
 humbly, humblement.
 humor, humeur, *f.*
 hundred, cent.
 hunger, faim, *f.*
 hungry: to be hungry, avoir faim,
irr.
 hurry, se dépêcher [de].
 husband, mari, *m.*
 hut, chaumière, *f.*
 hypocrite, hypocrite, *m.*
 hypocritical, hypocrite.
 idea, idée, *f.*
 ideal (*n.*), idéal, *m.*
 ideal (*adj.*), idéal.
 idealize, idéaliser.
 idleness, oisiveté, *f.*
 idol, idole, *f.*
 idyl, idylle, *f.*

if, si.
 ignorant, ignorant.
 ill (*adj.*), malade.
 ill (*adv.*), mal.
 illness, maladie, *f.*
 ills, maux, *m. pl.*
 ill-treated, malmené.
 illusion, illusion, *f.*
 illustrious, illustre.
 imagination, imagination, *f.*
 imagine, imaginer, *transitive*; se
 figurer; s'imaginer.
 imitate, imiter. [sitôt.
 immediately, immédiatement; aus-
 immense, immense.
 immortal, immortel, *irr.*
 impatient, impatient.
 imperfection, imperfection, *f.*
 implore, supplier [de].
 imply, dire, *irr.*
 importance, importance, *f.*
 important, important; to be impor-
 tant, importer, *impersonal*; sub-
 junctive.
 impossible, impossible.
 impression, impression, *f.*
 improvised (*adj.*), improvisé.
 imprudent, imprudent.
 impudent, impudent.
 in, dans; en; in before dates, en.
 incident, incident, *m.*
 include, compter.
 income, rente, *f.*
 incomparable, incomparable.
 incontestable, incontestable.
 inconvenience, inconvé-
 nient, *m.*
 increase, augmenter.
 indeed, vraiment.
 indemnity, indemnité, *f.*
 Indian (*adj.*), indien, *irr.*
 indigence, dénuement, *m.*
 indignation, soulèvement, *m.*
 indiscreetly, indis-
 crètement.

indolence, indolence, *f.*
induce, réduire [à], *irr.*
indulgent, indulgent.
industrious, industrieux, *irr.*; laborieux, *irr.*
industry, industrie, *f.*
ineffaceable, ineffaçable.
inexhaustible, inépuisable.
inexpressible, inexprimable.
infallible, infaillible.
inflexible, inflexible.
influence, influence, *f.*
inform, prévenir, *irr.*
informed (*adj.*), informé.
ingenious, ingénieux, *irr.*
ingratitude, ingratitude, *f.*
inhabitant, habitant, *m.*
inherit, hériter (de).
injustice, injustice, *f.*
ink, encre, *f.*
innkeeper, hôtelier, *m.*
innocence, innocence, *f.*
innocent, innocent.
inquiry, recherche, *f.*; many inquiries, maintes recherches.
inquisitor, inquisiteur, *m.*
inscrutableness, impénétrabilité, *f.*
insect, insecte, *m.*
insignificant, frivole.
insipid, insipide. [sister, *intrans.*
insist, soutenir, *irr.*, *transitive*; instead of, au lieu de.
institute, instituer.
instruction, instruction, *f.*
intelligence, intelligence, *f.*
intemperance, intempérance, *f.*
intended (*n.*), futur, *m.*
intention, intention, *f.*
interest (*n.*), intérêt, *m.*
interest (*vb.*), intéresser.
interesting, intéressant.
interpret, interpréter.
interrupt, interrompre.

interval, intervalle, *m.*
interview, entrevue, *f.*
intimate, intime.
into, dans; en.
intoxicated (*adj.*), enivré (de); to become intoxicated, s'enivrer.
intoxication, ivresse, *f.*
introduce, introduire, *irr.*
intruder, importun, *m.*
intrust, confier.
invade, envahir.
invent, inventer.
invention, invention, *f.*
invitation, invitation, *f.*
invite, inviter.
iron, fer, *m.*
irresistibly, irrésistiblement.
irritate, fâcher.
island, île, *f.* *isle*, île, *f.*
it, ce (*indef. pron. used as an expletive*); il (*pers. pron.*).
Italian (*n.*), Italien, *m.*, *irr.*
Italian (*adj.*), italien, *irr.*
Italy, Italie, *f.*
its, son, *irr.*

January, janvier.
jealous, jaloux, *irr.*
jester, bouffon, *m.*
Jew, Juif, *m.*, *irr.*
jewel, bijou, *m.*, *irr.*
Joan of Arc, Jeanne d'Arc.
join, rejoindre, *irr.*
joke, plaisanterie, *f.*
Josephine, Joséphine.
journey, voyage, *m.*
joy, joie, *f.*
joyously, joyeusement.
judge (*vb.*), juger.
judge (*n.*), juge, *m.*
judgment, jugement, *m.*
July, juillet.
just, juste.

- keen, vif, *irr.*
 keep, garder; to keep from, empêcher [de]; to keep up, entretenir, *irr.*
 kill, tuer.
 kind (*n.*), sorte, *f.*; genre, *m.*
 kind (*adj.*), bon, *irr.*
 kindly, avec bonté.
 kindness, bienveillance, *f.*
 king, roi, *m.*
 kingdom, royaume, *m.*
 kiss, baiser.
 kitchen, cuisine, *f.*
 knee, genou, *m.*, *irr.*
 kneel down, s'agenouiller.
 knife, couteau, *m.*, *irr.*
 knight, chevalier, *m.*
 knighthood, chevalerie, *f.*
 knock, frapper.
 know, savoir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; to know = to be acquainted with, connaître, *irr.*
 known (*adj.*), connu.
 label, étiquette, *f.*
 laboriously, péniblement.
 lace, dentelle, *f.*
 lack, manquer (de).
 lady, dame, *f.*; young lady, demoiselle, *f.*
 lamb, brebis, *f.*, *irr.*; agneau, *m.*, *irr.*
 lamp, lampe, *f.*
 land, déposer, *transitive*; aborder, *intransitive*.
 landau, landau, *m.*
 language, langue, *f.*; langage, *m.*
 languish, languir.
 large, gros, *irr.*; grand.
 last (*vb.*), durer.
 last (*adj.*), dernier, *irr.*; at last, enfin; à la fin.
 late, tard.
 lately, dernièrement.
 Latin, latin, *m.*; Latin Quarter, quartier Latin, *m.*
 latter, celui-ci, celle-ci, ceux-ci, celles-ci.
 laudable, louable.
 laugh, rire, *irr.*
 laughter, rire, *m.*
 law, loi, *f.*; law = profession, le droit.
 lawyer, avocat, *m.*
 lay, poser.
 laziness, paresse, *f.*
 lazy, paresseux, *irr.*
 lead (*n.*), plomb, *m.*
 lead (*vb.*), mener; conduire, *irr.*; lead back, ramener.
 leader, chef, *m.*
 league, lieue, *f.*
 learn, apprendre [à], *irr.*
 learning (*n.*), instruction, *f.*; savoir, *m.* (knowledge acquired).
 least (*adj.*), moindre; the least, le moins.
 leave, laisser (a person or thing); quitter (a person or place); *sortir de, *irr.* (come out of a place).
 leg, jambe, *f.*
 legacy, legs, *m.*, *sing.*
 legitimate, légitime.
 lend, prêter.
 less, moins de; moins (*adv. of degree*).
 lessen, diminuer.
 lesson, leçon, *f.*
 lest (*conj.*), que, *subjunctive*.
 let, laisser [*no prep.*].
 letter, lettre, *f.*
 lettuce, laitue, *f.*
 liberality, libéralité, *f.*
 liberty, liberté, *f.*
 library, bibliothèque, *f.*
 lie (*n.*), mensonge, *m.*
 lie down, se coucher.

- lieutenant** : second lieutenant, lieutenant en second, *m.*
life, vie, *f.*
life-like, vivant.
lift, élever; to lift up, soulever.
light (*vb.*), allumer.
light (*adj.*), léger, *irr.*
light (*n.*), lumière, *f.*
like (*vb.*), aimer [à]; like = wish, vouloir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; like = think of, trouver; like = to delight in, se plaire (à), *irr.*
like (*adv.*), comme.
line, ligne, *f.*
linen, toile, *f.*
link, anneau, *m.*, *irr.*
lion-tamer, dompteur, *m.*
lip, lèvre, *f.*
listen, écouter [*no prep.*], *transitive.*
literal, littéral, *irr.*
literary, littéraire; literary note, note littéraire, *f.*
literature, littérature, *f.*
little (*adj.*), petit; little = not much, peu de.
little (*pron.*), peu; a little, un peu (de).
little (*adv.*), peu; little by little, peu à peu.
live, vivre, *irr.*; live = reside, résider, demeurer; to live in, habiter [*no prep.*]; to live well, faire bonne chère, *irr.*; long live, Vive!
lively, vif, *irr.*
livre, livre, *f.*
loaf, or loaf of bread, pain, *m.*
locality, local, *m.*, *irr.*
lodge, loger.
loftiness, élévation, *f.*
London, Londres. [nuyer.
lonesome: to be lonesome, s'en-long, (*adj.*), long, *irr.*
- long** (*adv.*), longtemps; a long time, longtemps; as long as, aussi longtemps que.
long (*vb.*), aspirer [à].
longer (*adv.*), plus longtemps.
look (*vb.*), regarder; to look at, regarder; to look for, chercher; to look upon, regarder.
look (*n.*), air, *m.* [seigneur.
lord, seigneur, *m.*; my lord, mon-lord, perdre; to lose one's self or one's way, s'égarer.
lot, lot, *m.*; sort, *m.*
loud, haut.
louis, louis, *m.*
Louvre, Louvre, *m.*
love (*n.*), amour, *m.*; in love with, amoureux (de); épris (de).
love (*vb.*), aimer; chérir; to love to, aimer [à].
lovely, charmant.
lover, amoureux, *m.*, *irr.*; amant, *m.*
loving, aimant.
lower, inférieur.
loyal, constant.
luck: bad luck, le guignon.
lucrative, lucratif, *irr.*
lull, bercer.
luminous, lumineux, *irr.*
lunch, déjeuner, *m.*
Lyons, Lyon.
machine, machine, *f.*
madam, madame.
madrigal, madrigal, *m.*, *irr.*
magnificent, magnifique.
majesty, majesté, *f.*
make, faire [*no prep.*], *irr.*; to make fun of, se moquer (de); se rire (de), *irr.*; to make happy, rendre heureux; to make haste, se dépêcher [de]; to make a trip, faire un voyage, *irr.*

make (*n.*), modèle, *m.*

malady, maladie, *f.*

mamma, maman.

man, homme, *m.*

manage, savoir [*no prep.*], *irr.*

manly, mâle.

manner, manière, *f.*

manners, façons, *f. pl.*

manufacture, fabriquer.

many, beaucoup (de); bien des;

maintes; **so many**, tant (de); **a**

great many, beaucoup (de);

beaucoup (*without the noun*);

how many, combien (de).

marble, marbre, *m.*

march, marche, *f.*

mare, jument, *f.*

mariner, marin, *m.*

Mark: Saint Mark, Saint-Marc.

mark, marquer.

marriage, mariage, *m.*; **love marriage**, mariage d'amour, *m.*

marry, marier; épouser; **marry again**, se remarier.

Marseilles, Marseille.

marvel, merveille, *f.*

Mary, Marie. [de messe, *m.*

Mass, messe, *f.*; **Mass-book**, livre

massacre (*vb.*), massacrer.

massacre (*n.*), massacre, *m.*

master, maître, *m.*

masterpiece, chef-d'œuvre, *m.*

match, parti, *m.*

matter, affaire, *f.*

matters: in **matters**, en matière.

mature, mûr.

maxim, maxime, *f.*

may (= *be able*), pouvoir [*no prep.*], *irr.*

mean (*vb.*), vouloir dire, *irr.*

mean (*adj.*), méchant.

means (*n.*), moyen, *m.*

meanwhile, cependant.

mediator, médiateur, *m.*, *irr.*

meet, rencontrer; rejoindre, *irr.* (*by appointment*); se réunir (*of a society*).

meeting (*n.*), réunion, *f.*

melancholy, mélancolie, *f.*

memory, mémoire, *f.*; **memory** = *remembrance*, souvenir, *m.*

men: **young men**, jeunes gens, *m. pl.*; **old men**, vieillards, *m. pl.*;

men of letters, hommes de lettres, *m. pl.*

merchant, négociant, *m.*; **merchant**, *m.*

mere, simple.

merit, mérite, *m.*

method, procédé, *m.*

metre, mètre, *m.*

middle, milieu, *m.*

midst: in the **midst**, au milieu.

midwinter: in **midwinter**, en plein hiver.

mild, doux, *irr.*

military, militaire.

milk, lait, *m.*

mind, esprit, *m.*

mine, le mien, la mienne, les miens, les miennes.

mineral, minéral, *m.*, *irr.*

mingled with, mêlé (de).

minister, ministre, *m.*; **prime minister**, premier ministre, *m.*

minority, minorité, *f.*

minute, minute, *f.*

miracle, miracle, *m.*

mirror, glace, *f.*

mischievous, malicieux, *irr.*

miser, avare, *m.*

misery, misère, *f.*

misfortune, malheur, *m.*

miss, manquer [de]; **to miss the road**, se tromper de route.

mist, brume, *f.*

- mistake**, faute, *f.*
mistaken : to be mistaken, se tromper.
mix, mêler (de).
model, modèle, *m.*
modern, moderne.
modest, modeste.
modestly, modestement.
moment, moment, *m.*; but a moment since, tout à l'heure; from that moment, à partir de ce moment.
money, argent, *m.*
monotonous, monotone.
month, mois, *m.*
monument, monument, *m.*
moon, lune, *f.*
moral, moral, *irr.*
morally, moralement.
morals, mœurs, *f. pl.*
more (*adv. of degree*), plus; not any more, ne . . . plus.
more (*pron. and adj.*), plus (de); davantage; not any more, no more, ne . . . plus (de).
moreover, du reste.
morning, matin, *m.* (*considered as a unit*); matinée, *f.* (*considered in detail*).
mortal, mortel, *irr.*
mosaic, mosaïque, *f.*
Moses, Moïse.
moss, mousse, *f.*
most (*pron. and adj.*), le plus (de); la plupart (de *er* du, de la, des).
most (*adv.*), plus.
mother, mère, *f.*
mother-in-law, belle-mère, *f.*
motionless, immobile.
motive, motif, *m.*
mould, façonner.
mount, *monter.
mountain, montagne, *f.*
mountainous, montagneux, *irr.*
mourn, pleurer, *transitive*.
mouse, souris, *f.*
mouth, bouche, *f.*
move, se mouvoir, *irr.*
movement, mouvement, *m.*
much, beaucoup (de); as much, autant (de); as much as, autant que; how much, combien (de); too much, trop (de); so much, tant (de); very much, beaucoup.
much (*adv. of degree*), beaucoup.
museum, musée, *m.*
music, musique, *f.*
musician, musicien, *m., irr.*
must, devoir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; falloir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; *impersonal*.
mutually, mutuellement.
my, mon, *irr.*
mystery, mystère, *m.*
nail, ongle, *m.*
name, nom, *m.*
named, nommé.
Napoleon, Napoléon.
nation, nation, *f.*
national, national, *irr.*
native, natal.
natural, naturel, *irr.*
naturally, naturellement.
naturalness, naturel, *m.*
nature, nature, *f.*
navy, marine, *f.*
near, près de; quite near, tout près de.
neat, net, *irr.*
necessary, nécessaire; to be necessary, falloir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; *impersonal*.
necessity, nécessité, *f.*
neck, cou, *m.*
necklace, collier, *m.*

- need** (*vb.*), avoir besoin [de], *irr.*; falloir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; *impersonal.*
need (*n.*), besoin, *m.*
neglect (*vb.*), négliger.
negligence, négligence, *f.*
negro, nègre, *m.*, *irr.*
neighbor, voisin, *m.*
neither, ne . . . ni; **neither** . . . nor, ne . . . ni . . . ni.
never, ne . . . jamais; *without verb*, jamais.
nevertheless, cependant.
new, nouveau, *irr.*
news, nouvelles, *f. pl.*; **nouvelle**, *f. sing.*
newspaper, journal, *m.*, *irr.*
next, prochain.
niece, nièce, *f.*
night, nuit, *f.*; **last night**, hier au soir.
nightingale, rossignol, *m.*
nightmare, cauchemar, *m.*
nine, neuf.
no (*adj.*), ne . . . aucun; ne . . . pas de; nul . . . ne; pas un; **no one**, ne . . . personne, *m.*; nul . . . ne, *m.*; **no more**, ne . . . plus (de),
no (*adv.*), non.
noble (*adj.*), noble.
noble (*n.*), noble, *m.*
nobleman, gentilhomme, *m. sing.*; gentilshommes, *m. pl.*
nobleness, noblesse, *f.*
nobody, ne . . . personne, *m.*
noise, bruit, *m.*
nonchalance, nonchalance, *f.*
none, aucun . . . ne.
nor, ni.
Normandy, Normandie, *f.*
nose, nez, *m.*
not, ne . . . pas; ne . . . point.
not that (*conj.*), non pas que, *sub-junctive*.
- note**, billet, *m.*
nothing, ne . . . rien, *m.*; *without verb*, rien; **nothing but**, rien que.
notice, remarquer; s'apercevoir, *irr.*
novel, roman, *m.*
now, maintenant; à present; **until now**, jusque-là.
number, nombre, *m.*
numerous, nombreux, *irr.*
nut, amande, *f.*
O, 8.
oak, chêne, *m.*
obedient, obéissant.
obey, obéir (à).
object, objet, *m.*; **object** = aim, but, *m.*
oblige, obliger [de].
obscure, obscure.
obscurity, obscurité, *f.*
observe, observer.
observer, observateur, *m.*, *irr.*
obstacle, obstacle, *m.*
obtain, obtenir, *irr.*
occasion, occasion, *f.*
occupation, occupation, *f.*
occupy, occuper; habiter (*a house*); **to occupy one's self**, s'occuper.
ocean, océan, *m.*
October, octobre.
odious, odieux, *irr.*
of, de.
offer, offrir à [de], *irr.*
offend, offenser.
offence, offense, *f.*
office, charge, *f.*
often, souvent.
oh, oh.
oil, huile, *f.*
old, vieux, *irr.*; âgé.
old: **to be** . . . **years old**, avoir . . . ans, *irr.*
omelet, omelette, *f.*

on, sur.

once, une fois; all at once, tout à coup; at once, à la fois; at once = immediately, aussitôt: sur-le-champ.

one (numeral), un, une.

one (pron.), on; the one (distinguished from "the other"), l'un, l'une; the one (dem.), celui, celle, ceux, celles; this one, that one, celui-ci, celui-là, celle-ci, celle-là; which one or ones, lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles; one another, les uns, les autres, les unes, les autres; se.

only (adv.), ne . . . que; seulement; not only, non seulement.

only (adj.), seul.

open, ouvrir, irr.

opera, opéra, m.

operation, opération, f.

opinion, opinion, f.

opportunity, occasion, f.

oppose, opposer.

or, ou.

orator, orateur, m.

ordain, ordonner.

order, ordre, m.; in order that, afin que, subjunctive; in order to, afin de, before infinitive.

origin, origine, f.

originality, originalité, f.

Orleans, Orléans.

ornament, ornement, m.

orphan, orphelin, m.

other (adj. and pron.), autre.

others, autrui, m. sing., indefinite.

ought, devoir [no prep.], irr.

our, notre, irr.

ours, le nôtre, la nôtre, les nôtres, m. and f. pl.

out of doors, dehors.

overcome, surmonter.

overwhelm (= with a favorable meaning), combler (de); overwhelm (= with an unfavorable meaning), accabler (de).

owe, devoir (à), irr.

owl, hibou, m., irr.

own, propre.

package, paquet, m.

page, page, f.; page = boy, page, m.

pain, causer du chagrin.

paint, peindre, irr.

painting, peinture, f.

painter, peintre, m. [paires, f.]

pair: dozen pair, douzaine de

palace, palais, m.

pamphlet, brochure, f.

Pantheon, Panthéon, m.

paper, papier, m.

Paradise Lost, Paradis perdu, m.

parent, parent, m.

park, parc, m.

part (n.), partie, f.; the greater part, la plus grande partie; for the most part, pour la plupart; to make part of, faire partie de, irr.; on the part of, de la part de.

part from, se séparer de.

partridge, perdrix, f.

parvenu, parvenu, m. [passer.

pass, passer; pass = to occur, se

passion, passion, f.

passionate, passionné.

path, chemin, m.

pathetic (n.), touchant, m.

pathetic (adj.), pathétique.

patience, patience, f.

patient (n.), malade, m.

patiently, patiemment.

pay (n.), solde, f.

pay (vb.), payer.

peace, paix, f.

peacefully, tranquillement.

- pear, poire, *f.*
 peasant, paysan, *m., irr.*
 pebble, caillou, *m., irr.*
 peculiar, original, *irr.*
 peculiarity, ridicule, *m.*
 pecuniary, pécuniaire.
 pen, plume, *f.*
 pension, pension, *f.*
 people, on, *m. sing. (always used nominatively, and standing for people in a vague, general sense; requires singular verb); gens, m. and f. pl. (translates people, when this word stands for a number, class or group of individuals; for agreement of adjectives, see grammar); people = nation or populace, peuple, m. sing.; country people, gens du pays, m. pl.; people of society, gens du monde, m. pl.*
 perceive, apercevoir, *irr.*; s'apercevoir, *irr.*
 perfect (*vb.*), perfectionner.
 perfect (*adj.*), parfait.
 perfection, perfection, *f.*
 perfectly, parfaitement.
 perfidious, perfide.
 perform, remplir.
 performance, représentation, *f.*
 performer, exécutant, *m.*
 perfume (*vb.*), embaumer.
 perfume (*n.*), parfum, *m.*
 perhaps, peut-être.
 perish, périr.
 permanent, durable.
 permission, permission, *f.*
 permit, permettre à [de], *irr.*
 perseverance, persévérance, *f.*
 persistent, persistant.
 person, personne, *f.*
 personage, personnage, *m.*
 personal, personnel, *irr.*
 persuade, persuader (*à*).
 persuasive, persuasif, *irr.*
 Peter the Cruel, Pierre le Cruel.
 Peter the Great, Pierre le Grand.
 phase, phase, *f.*
 philosophy, philosophie, *f.*
 physiognomy, physionomie, *f.*
 physiologist, physiologiste, *m.*
 piano, piano, *m.*
 pick, cueillir, *irr.*; to pick out, choisir; to pick up, ramasser; to pick up = save or rescue, recueillir, *irr.*
 picture, tableau, *m., irr.*
 picturesque, pittoresque.
 piece, morceau, *m., irr.*; piece = play, pièce, *f.*
 pious, pieux, *irr.*
 piqued, piqué.
 pistole, pistole, *f.*
 pitiless, impitoyable (*pour*).
 pity, pitié, *f.*; it is a pity, c'est dommage, *subjunctive.*
 place, place, *f.*; endroit, *m.*
 plain, plaine, *f.*
 plan, plan, *m.*
 planet, planète, *f.*
 plant, plante, *f.*
 play (*vb.*), jouer.
 play (*n.*), pièce, *f.*
 plaything, joujou, *m., irr.*
 please (*vb.*), plaire (*à*), *irr.*; if you please, veuillez (*before the verb*).
 pleased with, content (*de*).
 pleasure, plaisir, *m.*
 ploughman, laboureur, *m.*
 Plutarch, Plutarque.
 poet, poète, *m.*
 poetic, poétique.
 poetry, poésie, *f.*
 point, point, *m.*
 point out, désigner.
 poison, poison, *m.*

- polite, poli.
 politely, poliment.
 political, politique.
 poor, pauvre.
 poorly, mal.
 Pope, pape, *m.*
 popular, populaire.
 popularized, popularisé.
 populated, peuplé.
 porter, huissier, *m.*
 portrait, portrait, *m.*
 pose, se poser.
 position, position, *f.*
 possess, posséder.
 possible, possible.
 Post Office, poste, *f.*
 poverty, pauvreté, *f.*
 powder, poudre, *f.*
 power, pouvoir, *m.*
 powerful, puissant.
 prairie, prairie, *f.*
 praise (*vb.*), vanter; louer.
 praise (*n.*), éloges, *m. pl.*
 pray, prier.
 prayer, prière, *f.*; **Evening Prayer**,
 Prière du soir, *f.*
 precaution, précaution, *f.*
 precede, précéder.
 precious, précieux, *irr.*
 preciously, précieusement.
 precisely, précisément.
 precision, précision, *f.*
 precocious, précoce.
 prefer, aimer mieux; préférer.
 preference, préférence, *f.*
 prepare, préparer; to prepare one's
 self, se préparer [à].
 presence, présence, *f.*; presence of
 mind, sang-froid, *m.*
 present (*n.*), présent, *m.*; cadeau,
m., irr.
 present (*adj.*), présent.
 present (*vb.*), présenter; to pre-
 sent one's self, se présenter;
 to present with, remettre (à),
irr.
 presentation, représentation, *f.*
 presentiment, pressentiment, *m.*
 preserve, conserver; préserver.
 president, président, *m.*
 press, presser.
 pretend, prétendre; to pretend to,
 faire semblant de, *irr.*
 pretension, prétention, *f.*
 pretentious, prétentieux, *irr.*
 pretext, prétexte, *m.*
 pretty, joli.
 prevent, empêcher [de].
 prey, proie, *f.*
 price, prix, *m.*
 pride, orgueil, *m.*
 priest, prêtre, *m.*
 prince, prince, *m.*; Prince of Wales,
 prince de Galles, *m.*
 princess, princesse, *f.*
 principal (*n.*), principal, *m., irr.*
 principal (*adj.*), principal, *irr.*
 prison, prison, *f.*
 prisoner, prisonnier, *m., irr.*
 private, particulier, *irr.*; in private,
 en particulier; private life, vie pri-
 vée, *f.*
 privation, privation, *f.*
 prize, estimer.
 probable, probable.
 proclaim, proclamer.
 procure, procurer.
 prodigality, prodigalité, *f.*
 prodigious, prodigieux, *irr.*
 produce, produire, *irr.*
 production, production, *f.*
 profess, professer.
 profession, profession, *f.*
 professor, professeur, *m.*
 profit, profiter à; profit by, profiter
 profound, profond. [de].

progress, progrès, *m. pl.*
 progressive, progressif, *irr.*
 project, projet, *m.*
 prolong, prolonger.
 promise (*vb.*), promettre à [de], *irr.*
 promise (*n.*), promesse, *f.*
 promptly, promptement.
 pronounce, prononcer.
 proof, preuve, *f.*
 properly, proprement.
 property, biens, *m. pl.*
 prophet, prophète, *m.*
 proportion, proportion, *f.*
 propose, proposer [de].
 proposition, proposition, *f.*
 prose, prose, *f.*
 prosperity, prospérité, *f.*
 protect, protéger.
 protection, protection, *f.*
 protector, protecteur, *m., irr.*
 protégé, protégé, *m.*
 Protestant, protestant, *m.*
 proud, fier, *irr.*
 prove, prouver; to prove one's self,
 se montrer.
 Provence, Provence, *f.*
 provide, pourvoir (de), *irr.*
 provided (*conj.*), pourvu que, *sub-*
 junctive; moyennant que, *sub-*
 junctive.
 provided (*adj.*), pourvu (de).
 providence, providence, *f.*
 province, province, *f.*
 provision, provision, *f.*
 provost, prévôt, *m.*
 prudence, prudence, *f.*
 psychologist, psychologue, *m.*
 public (*n.*), public, *m.*
 public (*adj.*), public, *irr.*
 publication, publication, *f.*
 publish, publier.
 publisher, libraire, *m.*
 pug, camus.

punish, punir.
 pupil, élève, *m.*; écolier, *m., irr.*;
 prunelle, *f. (of the eye)*.
 pure, pur.
 purify, purifier.
 purity, pureté, *f.*
 purse, bourse, *f.*
 pursue, poursuivre, *irr.*
 put, mettre, *irr.*; to put back, re-
 mettre, *irr.*
 quality, qualité, *f.*
 quantity, quantité, *f.*
 quarrel, se brouiller.
 quarter, quartier, *m.*
 queen, reine, *f.*
 question (*vb.*), interroger.
 question: it is a question of, il
 s'agit de.
 quickly, vite.
 quiet, apaiser.
 quietly, tranquillement.
 quite (*adv.*), tout à fait.
 quite (= *all*), tout, toute, toutes.
 quote, citer.
 race, race, *f.*
 rain (*vb.*), pleuvoir, *irr.*; *imper-*
 sonal.
 rain (*n.*), pluie, *f.*
 raise, lever; to raise = *to bring*
 up, élever; to raise = *to elevate*,
 élever; to raise one's self,
 s'élever.
 rank, rang, *m.*; rank = *military*
 rank, grade, *m.*
 ransom one's self, se racheter.
 ransom (*n.*), rançon, *f.*
 rapid, rapide.
 rapidly, rapidement.
 rare, rare.
 rarely, rarement.
 rat, rat, *m.*

- rather, plutôt; **rather** = *somewhat*, assez.
 ravishing, ravissant.
 raw, naturel, *irr.*
 reach (*vb.*), atteindre (à), *irr.*; *parvenir (à), *irr.*
 read, lire, *irr.*; to read over, relire, *irr.*
 reading, lecture, *f.*
 ready, prêt.
 real (*n.*), réel, *m.*
 real (*adj.*), vrai; véritable.
 reality, réalité, *f.*
 realize, réaliser.
 really, véritablement.
 reap, recueillir, *irr.*
 reappear, reparaitre, *irr.*
 reascend, *remonter.
 reason, raison, *f.*
 reasonable, raisonnable.
 reassure, rassurer.
 recall, rappeler.
 receive, recevoir, *irr.*
 recite, réciter.
 recognize, reconnaître, *irr.*
 recommend, recommander.
 recommendation, recommandation, *f.*
 reconcile, réconcilier.
 recreation, récréation, *f.*
 red, rouge.
 redeem one's self, se racheter.
 redouble, redoubler.
 reduce, réduire, *irr.*
 reflect, réfléchir; **reflect** = *think*, réfléchir.
 reflection, réflexion, *f.*
 refuse, refuser [de].
 regard, regarder.
 regiment, régiment, *m.*
 regret (*vb.*), regretter [de].
 regret (*n.*), regret, *m.*
 regular, régulier, *irr.*
 reign (*vb.*), régner.
 reign (*n.*), règne, *m.*
 rejoice, se réjouir [de].
 relate, raconter.
 relative, parent, *m.*
 relic, relique, *f.*
 relieve, soulager.
 religion, religion, *f.*
 remain, *rester.
 remains, restes, *m. pl.*
 remark (*vb.*), remarquer.
 remark (*n.*), réflexion, *f.*
 remember, se rappeler; se souvenir (de), *irr.*
 remind, faire l'effet de, *irr.*
 remorse, remords, *m.*
 render, rendre.
 repaid, remboursé (de).
 repair, réparer; **repair** = *go*, se rendre.
 repast, repas, *m.*
 repeat, répéter.
 repelled (*adj.*), repoussé.
 repent, se repentir (de), *irr.*
 replace, remplacer.
 reply, répondre; répliquer.
 repose, reposer.
 represent, représenter.
 reproduce, reproduire, *irr.*
 reprove, reprendre (sur), *irr.*
 republic, république, *f.*
 reputation, réputation, *f.*
 request, demande, *f.*
 require, exiger.
 reread, relire, *irr.*
 resemble, ressembler (à).
 resentment, ressentiment, *m.*
 resignation, résignation, *f.*
 resist, résister (à).
 resolute, résolu.
 resolve, résoudre [de], *irr.*
 resource, ressource, *f.*
 respect (*vb.*), respecter.

- respect** (*n.*), respect, *m.*
rest (*vb.*), se reposer.
rest (*n.*), repos, *m.*
retain, retenir, *irr.*
retire, se retirer.
retreat, retraite, *f.*
return (= *give back*), rendre; **re-**
turn = *go back*, *retourner; **re-**
turn = *come back*, *revenir, *irr.*
reveal, révéler; livrer (*a secret*).
revery, rêverie, *f.*
revive, ranimer.
Revolution, Révolution, *f.*
reward, récompenser.
rhetoric, rhétorique, *f.*
rhyme, rime, *f.*
rich, riche.
riches, richesses, *f. pl.*
richness, richesse, *f.*
rid: to get rid of or to rid one's
self of, se débarrasser (*de*).
ride, monter.
rider, cavalier, *m.*
ridicule, ridicule, *m.*
ridiculous, ridicule.
right (*n.*), droit, *m.*; to be right,
avoir raison, *irr.*; **right away**,
tout de suite.
ring, bague, *f.*
ripen, mûrir.
rise, se lever; s'élever (*ascend*).
risk, risque, *m.*
rival (*n.*), rival, *m., irr.*
rival (*adj.*), rival, *irr.*
river, fleuve, *m.*
road, chemin, *m.*
roam, rôder.
rob, voler.
robust, robuste.
rock, rocher, *m.*
role, rôle, *m.*
roll, rouler.
rolling (*n.*), roulement, *m.*
Roman (*n.*), Romain, *m.*
Roman (*adj.*), romain.
roof, toit, *m.*
room, salle, *f.*; chambre, *f.*
root, racine, *f.*
rose, rose, *f.*; **wild rose**, rose de
buisson, *f.*; **rose leaf**, feuille de
rosy, vermeil, *irr.* [rose, *f.*
round, rond.
royal, royal, *irr.*
rudeness, impolitesse, *f.*
rugged, rugueux, *irr.*
ruin (*vb.*), perdre.
ruin (*n.*), ruine, *f.*
rule, règle, *f.*
run, courir, *irr.*; to run away, se
sauver.
Russia, Russie, *f.*
sacrifice (*vb.*), sacrifier.
sacrifice (*n.*), sacrifice, *m.*
sad, triste.
sadden, attrister.
sadness, tristesse, *f.*
saint, saint, *m.*; **Saint Bartholo-**
mew, Saint-Barthélemy.
salient, saillant.
salon, salon, *m.*
salutary, salutaire.
same, même (*before the noun*).
sanction, sanctionner.
satisfaction, satisfaction, *f.*
satisfied (*adj.*), satisfait (*de*).
satisfy, contenter.
Saturday, samedi.
savage, sauvage, *m.*
savant, savant, *m.*
save, sauver.
savings, épargnes, *f. pl.*
say, dire, *irr.*; that is to say, c'est
à-dire.
scaffold, échafaud, *m.*
scale, escalader.

- scandal, scandale, m.**
scandalous, scandaleux, irr.
scarcely, à peine.
scene, scène, f.
scholar, savant, m.
school, école, f.
science, science, f.
scold, gronder.
Scotch, Écossais, m.
scullion, marmiton, m.
search : in search of, à la recherche de.
season, saison, f.
seat, place, f.
seated, assis.
second, second.
secret (n.), secret, m.
secret (adj.), secret, irr.
see, voir [no prep.], irr.; to see again, revoir, irr.; to see once more, revoir, irr.
seek, chercher [à]; arrive to seek, *arriver chercher.
seem, sembler [no prep.]; paraître [no prep.], irr.
seize, saisir.
seldom, rare.
select, choisir.
self, soi-même.
selfish, égoïste.
selfishness, égoïsme, m.
sell, vendre.
send, envoyer, irr.; to send for, faire venir, irr.; faire appeler, irr.; to send away, renvoyer, irr.
sense, sens, m.
sensibility, sensibilité, f.
sensible, sensé.
sensitive, sensible.
sentiment, sentiment, m.
separation, séparation, f.
series, suite, f. sing.
serious, grave; sérieux, irr.
seriously, sérieusement; gravement.
serpent, serpent, m.
servant, serviteur, m.; domestique, m.
serve, servir, irr.
service, service, m.
set foot in, mettre les pieds au, irr.
set off (adj.), soutenu.
settle, régler (a bill); to settle down, s'établir (à).
seven, sept.
seventeenth, dix-septième.
seventy-eight, soixante-dix-huit.
seventy-five, soixante-quinze.
several, plusieurs.
severe, sévère.
shade, nuance, f. (of color); ombre, f.
shadow, ombre, f.
shame, honte, f.
shameful, honteux, irr.
shape, faire [no prep.], irr.
share, partager.
sheet, drap, m.
shell, noyau, m., irr.
shelter, abri, m.
shepherd, berger, m.; pasteur, m.
shepherdess, bergère, f.
shoe, soulier, m.
shop, boutique, f.
short, bref, irr.
shoulder, épaule, f.
show, montrer.
shut up, enfermer; to shut one's self up, s'enfermer.
shy, faire un écart, irr.
side : by the side of, à côté de; by the fireside, au coin du feu.
siege, siège, m.
silence, silence, m.
silent, silencieux, irr.
silk, soie, f.
similar, semblable.
simple, simple.

simpleton, sot, *m., irr.*
 simplicity, simplicité, *f.*
 sin, péché, *m.*
 since (*adv.*), depuis; but a moment since, tout à l'heure.
 since (*conj.*), puisque, depuis que.
 since (*prep.*), depuis.
 sincere, sincère.
 sincerity, sincérité, *f.*
 sing, chanter.
 single, seul; a single one, un seul.
 singular, singulier, *irr.*
 sir, monsieur.
 Sire, Sire.
 sister, sœur, *f.*; sister = nun, religieuse or sœur, *f.*
 sit down at, se mettre (à), *irr.*; to sit up, veiller.
 site, emplacement, *m.*
 situated (*adj.*), situé.
 situation, situation, *f.*
 six, six.
 sixteen, seize.
 sketch, ébauche, *f.*
 skill, habileté, *f.*
 sky, ciel, *m., irr.*
 slave, esclave, *m.*
 sleep (*n.*), sommeil, *m.*
 sleep (*vb.*), dormir, *irr.*
 sleepy: to be sleepy, avoir sommeil, *irr.*
 small, petit.
 smallest, moindre.
 smile (*vb.*), sourire, *irr.*; to smile upon, sourire (à), *irr.*
 smile (*n.*), sourire, *m.*
 smoke, fumer.
 snow, neige, *f.*
 so (*adv.*), si; so that, de sorte que, *subjunctive*; afin que, *subjunctive*; pour que, *subjunctive*.
 soap, savon, *m.*
 society, société, *f.*

Socrates, Socrate.
 soil, sol, *m.*
 sojourn, séjour, *m.*
 soldier, soldat, *m.*
 solicitor, solliciteur, *m., irr.*
 solitary, solitaire.
 solitude, solitude, *f.*
 Solomon, Salomon.
 somber, sombre. [(*emphatic*).
 some (*adj.*), de + def. art.; quelque
 some (*pron.*), en; quelques-uns, quelques-unes (*emphatic*).
 somebody, on; quelqu'un, *m.*
 some one, quelqu'un, *m.*
 something, quelque chose, *m.*
 sometimes, quelquefois.
 somewhere, quelque part.
 son, fils, *m.*
 son-in-law, gendre, *m.*
 soon, bientôt; vite; as soon as, aussitôt que; dès que; sitôt que;
 soon after, peu après; as soon as possible, au plus tôt; so soon, si tôt.
 sooner, plutôt; sooner = earlier, plus tôt.
 sorrow, douleur, *f.*
 sort, espèce, *f.*
 sought after, recherché.
 soul, âme, *f.*
 sound, bruit, *m.*
 source, source, *f.*
 sow, semer.
 Spain, Espagne, *f.*
 Spanish, espagnol, *m.*
 spare, épargner (à).
 speak, parler.
 special, spécial, *irr.*
 spectacles, lunettes, *f. pl.*
 spectator, spectateur, *m., irr.*
 speech, compliment, *m.*
 spell, sort, *m.*
 spend, dépenser; passer (*of time*).

- spin, filer.
 spinner, fileuse, *f*.
 spirit, esprit, *m*.
 splendor, splendeur, *f*.
 spoil, gâter.
 spring, ressort, *m*.; source, *f*. (*of water*); source, *f*. (*figuratively*).
 sprite, lutin, *m*.
 stage, théâtre, *m*.
 stain, tache, *f*.
 stairs, escalier, *m. sing.*
 stand (= *endure*), supporter.
 stand around, entourer.
 star, étoile, *f*.; astre, *m*.
 start, *partir, *irr.*
 state (*vb.*), rapporter.
 state (*n.*), état, *m*.; the State, l'État, *m*.
 statute, statut, *m*.
 stay, *rester; demeurer.
 steeple, clocher, *m*.
 step, pas, *m*.
 stick (*vb.*), appliquer.
 stick (*n.*), bâton, *m*.
 stifle, étouffer.
 still (*adv.*), encore; toujours.
 stone, pierre, *f*.
 stop, arrêter, *transitive*; s'arrêter, *intransitive*.
 storm, orage, *m*.
 stormy, orageux, *irr.*
 story, histoire, *f*.; étage, *m*. (*of a house*).
 straight (*adv.*), tout droit.
 strange, étrange.
 stratagem, stratagème, *m*.
 straw, paille, *f*.
 stray from, s'éloigner (*de*).
 stream, ruisseau, *m.*, *irr.*
 street, rue, *f*.
 strength, force, *f*.
 strewn (*adj.*), semé (*de*).
 strike, frapper.
 striking (*adj.*), frappant.
 stripped (*adj.*), dépouillé.
 strong, fort.
 studious, studieux, *irr.*
 study (*vb.*), étudier.
 study (*n.*), étude, *f*.
 stupid, bête.
 stupidity, bêtise, *f*.
 style, style, *ni.*; given style, genre donné, *m*.
 subject, sujet, *m*.
 sublime (*adj.*), sublime.
 sublime (*n.*), sublime, *m*.
 sublimity, élévation, *f*.
 subsistence, subsistance, *f*.
 subtle, subtil.
 succeed, réussir; to succeed = *come after*, succéder (à); to succeed in, *parvenir [à], *irr.*; réussir [à].
 success, succès, *m*.
 successive, successif, *irr.*
 successively, successivement.
 such, tel, *irr.*; pareil, *irr.*; such before *adj. or adv.*, si; such a before a noun, un tel, une telle; such a before *adj. or adv.*, un si, une si; such as, tel que, *irr.*
 suddenly, tout à coup.
 suffice, suffire, *irr.*
 sufficient, suffisant.
 suit, convenir (à), *irr.*
 suitor, prétendu, *m*.
 sulky, boudeur, *irr.*
 sum, somme, *f*.
 summit, sommet, *m*.
 sumptuous, fastueux, *irr.*
 sun, soleil, *m*.
 sup, souper.
 superb, superbe.
 superfluous, superflu.
 superior, supérieur.
 supernumerary, surnuméraire.
 superstition, superstition, *f*.

supper, souper, *m.*
 suppose (*conj.*), supposé que, *sub-junctive*.
 sure, sûr.
 surely, certes.
 surface, surface, *f.*
 surmount, surmonter.
 surpass, surpasser.
 surprise (*n.*), étonnement, *m.*
 surprised, étonné [de]; to be surprised, s'étonner [de].
 surround, entourer (de).
 surrounded by, entouré (de).
 survive, survivre (à), *irr.*
 suspect, se douter; soupçonner.
 suspend, suspendre.
 suspicion, soupçon, *m.*
 sustain, soutenir, *irr.*
 swallow, avaler.
 swear, jurer [de].
 sweet, doux, *irr.*
 sweets, gâteaux, *m. pl.*
 Swiss (*n.*), Suisse, *m.*
 Switzerland, Suisse, *f.*
 sword, épée, *f.*
 symbol, image, *f.*
 symbolical, emblématique.
 syntax, syntaxe, *f.*
 system, méthode, *f.*

table, table, *f.*
 tact, bonne grâce, *f.*
 take, prendre, *irr.*; conduire, *irr.*; mener (*conduct*); porter (*carry*); it takes, falloir [*no prep.*], *irr.*, *impersonal*; to take back, ramener (*persons*); to take along, to take with or to take to, emmener (*persons*); to take possession of, s'emparer de; se saisir de; to take a walk, se promener; to take part in, prendre part à, *irr.*; to take place, avoir lieu, *irr.*; to

take care not to, se bien garder de; to take communion, communier; to take the trip, faire la route, *irr.*; to take a journey, faire un voyage, *irr.*; to take up one's residence, se fixer (à); to take refuge, se réfugier.

talent, talent, *m.*
 talk, parler; causer.
 talker, causeur, *m., irr.*
 tall, grand.
 tame, apprivoiser.
 taste (*vb.*), goûter (à).
 taste (*n.*), goût, *m.*
 tavern, auberge, *f.*
 teach, apprendre (à), *irr.*
 teacher, maître, *m., irr.*
 teaching, enseignement, *m.*
 tear (*n.*), larme, *f.*
 tear away from, arracher (à); to tear into shreds, mettre en lambeaux, *irr.*
 telegram, dépêche, *f.*
 tell, dire à [de], *irr.*
 temperate, modéré; sobre (*of persons*).
 temple, temple, *m.*; tower of the Temple, tour du Temple, *f.*
 tempt, tenter [de].
 ten, dix.
 tender, tendre.
 tenderly, tendrement.
 tenderness, tendresse, *f.*
 Terence, Térèce.
 term, terme, *m.*
 terrible, terrible.
 terror, effroi, *m.*
 testament, testament, *m.*
 than, que; before numerals, de.
 thank, remercier.
 thanks to, grâce à.
 that (*adj.*), ce, *irr.*
 that (*conj.*), que.

that (*dem. pron.*), *def.*, celui, celle, ceux, celles; *indef.*, cela; **that** = *it*, *ce*.

that (*rel. pron.*), qui, que; **all that** or **everything that**, tout ce qui, tout ce que.

the, le, la, les.

theatre, théâtre, *m.*

their, leur, *irr.*

theirs, le leur, la leur, les leurs (*m. and f. pl.*).

then, alors (*at that time*); puis (*after that*); ensuite (*next*); donc (*so, therefore*).

there, y; là (*emphatic*); il (*expletive*); **there is**, **there are**, il y a; voilà (*emphatic*); **down there**, là-bas.

these (*adj.*), ces (*m. and f. pl.*).

these (*dem. pron.*), ceux, celles; ceux-ci, celles-ci (*emphatic*).

Thibet, Thibet, *m.*

thick, épais, *irr.*

thing, chose, *f.*

think, penser; **to think** = *believe*, croire [*no prep.*], *irr.*; **to think** of, penser (à).

third, troisième.

third (*n.*), tiers, *m.*

thirteen, treize.

thirteenth, treizième.

thirty, trente.

this (*adj.*), ce, *irr.*

this (*pron.*), ceci.

thoroughly: so thoroughly, tellement.

those (*adj.*), ces (*m. and f. pl.*).

those (*pron.*), ceux, celles; ceux-là, celles-là (*emphatic*).

though: even though, même.

thought, pensée, *f.*

thousand (*adj.*), mille (*invariable*).

threaten, menacer [*de*].

three, trois.

threshold, seuil, *m.*

through, à travers.

throw, jeter; **to throw one's self back**, se rejeter.

thus, ainsi.

thy, ton, *irr.*

tie, attacher.

time, temps, *m.*; fois, *f.* (*repetition or occasion*); a short time, peu de temps; at a time, de suite; from this time on, dès lors; from time to time, de temps en temps; to have time to, avoir le temps [*de*], *irr.*

times: those times, ces temps-là.

tire one's self, se fatiguer.

title, titre, *m.*

to, à (*signifying direction*); pour (*purpose*); de (*loose connective*).

to-day, aujourd'hui.

together, ensemble.

tolerant, tolérant.

tolerate, supporter.

tomb, tombeau, *m.*, *irr.*

to-morrow, demain.

tongue, langue, *f.*

too, aussi (*also*).

too (*adv. of degree*), trop; **too much** or **too many**, trop (*de*).

torment, tourmenter.

torrid, brûlant.

torturer, bourreau, *m.*, *irr.*

totally, absolument.

touch, toucher.

touching, touchant.

toward or **towards**, vers (*in the direction of*); envers (*with regard to*).

tradition, tradition, *f.*

tragedy, tragédie, *f.*

train (*vb.*), former.

train (*n.*), train, *m.*

Tower

traitor, traltre, *m., irr.*
 trample upon, piétiner, *transitive.*
 translation, traduction, *f.*
 trap-door, trappe, *f.*
 travel, voyager.
 traveller, voyageur, *m., irr.*
 treacherous, perfide.
 treasure, trésor, *m.*
 treat, traiter.
 tree, arbre, *m.*
 tremble, trembler.
 tribe, tribu, *f.*
 triumph (*vb.*), triompher (*de*).
 triumph (*n.*), triomphe, *m.*
 troop or troupe, troupe, *f.*
 trouble (*vb.*), inquiéter.
 trouble (*n.*), peine, *f.*; to have
 trouble in, avoir de la peine [à],
irr.
 true, vrai.
 truly, en vérité.
 trunk, tronc, *m. (of trees)*; trompe,
f. (of elephants).
 trust, se fier (à).
 truth, vérité, *f.*; in truth, en vé-
 rité.
 try, s'efforcer [de]; essayer [de].
 try on, essayer.
 tube, tuyau, *m., irr.*
 tulip, tulipe, *f.*
 turn (*vb.*), tourner; se tourner, *in-*
transitive.
 turn (*n.*), tournure, *f.*
 tutor, précepteur, *m.*
 twelve, douze.
 twenty, vingt.
 two, deux.
 twofold, deux fois.
 type, type, *m.*
 ugliness, laideur, *f.*
 ugly, laid.
 unceasingly, sans cesse.

uncertain, incertain.
 uncle, oncle, *m.*
 unconquerable, invincible.
 under, sous.
 undergo, subir.
 understand, comprendre, *irr.*
 undertake, se livrer (à).
 uneasy, inquiet, *irr.*
 unexpected, inattendu.
 unfavorably, défavorablement.
 unfortunate (*adj.*), fâcheux, *irr.*
 unfortunate (*n.*), malheureux, *m.,*
[irr.]
 ungrateful, ingrat.
 unhappy, malheureux, *irr.*
 unhealthy, malsain.
 uniform, monotone.
 unimportant, indifférent.
 union, union, *f.*
 unique, unique.
 unity, union, *f.*
 universal, universel, *irr.*
 universe, univers, *m.*
 unjust, injuste.
 unjustly, injustement.
 unless, à moins que, *subjunctive.*
 until (*conj.*), jusqu'à ce que, *sub-*
junctive; en attendant que, *sub-*
junctive.
 until (*prep.*), jusqu'à; until now,
 jusque-là.
 upon, sur.
 upright, droit.
 use, se servir (de), *irr.*; employer.
 useful, utile.
 useless, inutile.
 uselessly, inutilement.
 uselessness, désœuvrement, *m.*
 usual, habituel, *irr.*
 usually, ordinairement.
 utter, proférer.
 vague, vague.
 vaguely, vaguement.

- vain**, vain; **in vain**, vainement.
vainglory, vaine gloire, *f.*
valet, valet de chambre, *m.*; valet.
valiant, vaillant.
valise, valise, *f.*
vanish, s'évanouir.
vanity, vanité, *f.*
vanquish, vaincre, *irr.*
variety, variété, *f.*
various, divers.
vary, varier.
vast, vaste.
vegetable, végétal, *m., irr.*; légume, *m.* (*plants used as food*).
Venetian, Vénitien, *m., irr.*
Venice, Venise, *f.*
venomous, venimeux, *irr.*
verdure, verdure, *f.*
veritable, véritable.
verse, vers, *m.*; **piece of verse**, pièce de vers, *f.*
versification, versification, *f.*
versifier, versificateur, *m.*
very (*adj.*), même (*after the noun*).
very (*adv.*), très; bien; fort.
vicar, curé, *m.*
vice, vice, *m.*
victim, victime, *f.*; **victim of or to**, en proie à.
victorious, vainqueur.
victory, victoire, *f.*
Vienna, Vienne.
view, vue, *f.*; **with a view to**, en vue de.
vigor, vigueur, *f.*
village, village, *m.*
violet, violette, *f.*
violin, violon, *m.*
violinist, violoniste, *m.*
Virgin, vierge, *f.*
virtue, vertu, *f.*
virtuoso, virtuose, *m.*
virtuous, vertueux, *irr.*
visit (*vb.*), visiter.
visit (*n.*), visite, *f.*
visitor, visiteur, *m., irr.*
vocabulary, vocabulaire, *m.*
voice, voix, *f.*
volcano, volcan, *m.*
vowel, voyelle, *f.*
voyage, voyage, *m.*
wages, gages, *m. pl.*
wait for, attendre.
wake up, se réveiller.
walk (*vb.*), marcher.
walk (*n.*), promenade, *f.*
wall, mur, *m.*
want, vouloir [*no prep.*], *irr.*
war, guerre, *f.*
warm, chaud.
wash, laver.
waste, perdre.
watch, montre, *f.*
water (*vb.*), arroser.
water (*n.*), eau, *f., irr.*
wave, flot, *m.*
way, chemin, *m.*; route, *f.*; **on the way**, en route or en chemin; **in such a way**, de telle sorte; **all the way**, toute la route.
weak, faible.
weakness, faiblesse, *f.*
wealth, richesse, *f.*
wear, porter; **to wear away**, user.
weary, se lasser (de), *intransitive*; fatiguer, *transitive*.
weather, temps, *m.*
wed, épouser.
week, semaine, *f.*
weep, pleurer.
weigh, peser.
well (*adv.*), bien; **as well as**, aussi bien que.
well (*interjection*), eh bien.
what (*adj. : int.*), quel, *irr.*

- what** (*adj.*: *indef.*), quel, *irr.*
what (*pron.*: *int.*), qu'est-ce qui (*subj.*); que or qu'est-ce que (*dir. obj.*); quoi (*obj. of prep.*); ce qui, ce que (*in indirect questions*).
what (*pron.*: *rel.*), ce qui, ce que.
what (*interjection*), eh quoi.
whatever (*adj.*), quel . . . que, quelle . . . que, quels . . . que, quelles . . . que.
whatever (*pron.*), quoi que.
wheat, blé, *m.*
wheel, rouage, *m.*
when, quand; lorsque (*not used in direct questions*).
whence, d'où.
where, où. [*if*, *si*.]
whether, que . . . que; **whether** = **which** (*adj.*: *int.*), quel.
which (*pron.*: *int.*), lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles.
which (*pron.*: *rel.*), qui (*subj.*); que (*obj. of verb*); lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles (*obj. of prep.*); of which, dont; after which, après quoi.
while, pendant que; *before present participle*, en; a little while, un peu.
whilst, tandis que.
whirlwind, tempête, *f.*
white, blanc, *irr.*
who (*int.*), qui or qui est-ce qui.
who (*rel.*), qui.
whoever, quiconque.
whole (*adj.*), tout, toute; **the whole**, tout le, toute la.
whole (*n.*), le tout.
wholly, tout à fait.
whom (*int.*), qui or qui est-ce que.
whom (*rel.*), que (*obj. of verb*); qui (*obj. of verb, antecedent un-*
expressed); qui (*obj. of prep.*); lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles.
whose, dont; de qui; duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles.
why, pourquoi.
wicked, méchant.
widow, veuve, *f.*
widower, veuf, *m.*
wife, femme, *f.*
wild, féroce; **wild** = *skidish*, ombrageux, *irr.*
will (= *wish, want, be willing*), vouloir [*no prep.*], *irr.*
willing: to be **willing**, vouloir bien [*no prep.*], *irr.*
wind, vent, *m.*
window, fenêtre, *f.*; **window glass**, vitres, *f. pl.*
wine, vin, *m.*; **wine cellar**, cave, *f.*
winter, hiver, *m.*
wise, sage.
wish (*vb.*), vouloir [*no prep.*], *irr.*; souhaiter [*no prep.*].
wish (*n.*), vœu, *m.*
wit (*n.*), esprit, *m.*; a wit, bel esprit, *m.*, *irr.*; homme d'esprit, *m.*
with, avec.
withdraw, se retirer.
within, en.
without (*prep.*), sans.
without (*conj.*), sans que.
witty, spirituel, *irr.*
wolf, loup, *m.*
woman, femme, *f.*
wonder, merveille, *f.*; to do **wonders**, faire merveille, *irr.*
wonderful, admirable.
wood, bois, *m.*; **woods**, bois, *m. pl.*
wool, laine, *f.*
word, mot, *m.*; parole, *f.*; in a word, en somme.

- words:** beyond words, au-dessus des paroles.
work (*vb.*), travailler.
work (*n.*), travail, *m., irr.*; ouvrage, *m.*; work = *literary production*, ouvrage, *m., or œuvre, f.*; at work, à l'œuvre.
world, monde, *m.*; **the New World**, le nouveau Monde.
worldly, mondain.
worn out, exténué (*de*).
worry, s'inquiéter (*de*).
worship, culte, *m.*
worst, pire.
worth (*n.*), valeur, *f.*
worth: to be worth, valoir [*no prep.*], *irr.*
worthy, digne.
wound, blesser.
wounded (*adj.*), blessé.
wretchedness, misère, *f.*
wring from, arracher (*à*).
wrinkled, ridé.
write, écrire, *irr.*
writer, écrivain, *m.*; **prose writer**, prosateur, *m.*; a writer of comedy, auteur comique, *m.*
writing, écriture, *f.*
wrong, tort, *m.*; to be wrong, avoir tort, *irr.*
year, an, *m.* (*considered as a unit*); année, *f.* (*considered in all its parts*).
yellow, jaune.
yes, oui.
yesterday, hier.
yet, encore; **yet** = *nevertheless*, pourtant; cependant.
yield, céder.
yonder, là-bas.
young, jeune.
your, votre, *irr.*
yours, le vôtre, la vôtre, les vôtres (*m. and f. pl.*).
youth, jeunesse, *f.*; **youth** = *young man*, jeune homme, *m.*
zeal, ardeur, *f.*

ADVERTISEMENTS

Heath's Modern Language Series.

FRENCH GRAMMARS AND READERS.

- Bruce's *Grammaire Française*. \$1.12.
Clarke's *Subjunctive Mood*. An inductive treatise, with exercises. 50 cts.
Edgren's *Compendious French Grammar*. \$1.12. Part I. 35 cts.
Fontaine's *Livre de Lecture et de Conversation*. 90 cts.
Fraser and Squair's *French Grammar*. \$1.12.
Fraser and Squair's *Abridged French Grammar*. \$1.10.
Fraser and Squair's *Elementary French Grammar*. 90 cts.
Grandgent's *Essentials of French Grammar*. \$1.00.
Grandgent's *Short French Grammar*. Help in pronunciation. 75 cts.
Grandgent's *Lessons and Exercises*. For *Grammar Schools*. 25 and 30 cts.
Hennequin's *French Modal Auxiliaries*. With exercises. 50 cts.
Houghton's *French by Reading*. \$1.12.
Mansion's *First Year French*. For young beginners. 50 cts.
Méthode Hénin. 50 cts.
Bruce's *Lectures Faciles*. 60 cts.
Bruce's *Dictées Françaises*. 30 cts.
Fontaine's *Lectures Courantes*. \$1.00.
Giese's *French Anecdotes*. 00 cts.
Hotchkiss' *Le Primer Livre de Français*. Boards. 35 cts.
Bowen's *First Scientific Reader*. 90 cts.
Davies' *Elementary Scientific French Reader*. 40 cts.
Lyon and Larpent's *Primary French Translation Book*. 60 cts.
Snow and Lebon's *Easy French*. 60 cts.
Super's *Preparatory French Reader*. 70 cts.
Bouvet's *Exercises in Syntax and Composition*. 75 cts.
Storr's *Hints on French Syntax*. With exercises. 30 cts.
Brigham's *French Composition*. 12 cts.
Comfort's *Exercises in French Prose Composition*. 30 cts.
Grandgent's *French Composition*. 50 cts.
Grandgent's *Materials for French Composition*. Each, 12 cts.
Kimball's *Materials for French Composition*. Each, 12 cts.
Mansion's *Exercises in Composition*. 160 pages. 60 cts.
Marcou's *French Review Exercises*. 25 cts.
Prisoners of the Temple (Guerber). For French Composition. 25 cts.
Story of Cupid and Psyche (Guerber). For French Composition. 18 cts.
Heath's *French Dictionary*. Retail price, \$1.50.

Deatb's Modern Language Series.

ELEMENTARY FRENCH TEXTS.

- Ségur's Les Malheurs de Sophie** (White). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
French Fairy Tales (Joynes). Vocabulary and exercises. 35 cts.
Saintine's Picciola. With notes and vocabulary by Prof. O. B. Super. 45 cts.
Mairét's La Tâche du Petit Pierre (Super). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Bruno's Les Enfants Patriotes (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Bruno's Tour de la France par deux Enfants (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Verne's L'Expédition de la Jeune Hardie (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Gervais Un Cas de Conscience (Horsley). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Génin's Le Petit Tailleur Bouton (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Assolant's Aventure du Célèbre Pierrot (Pain). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Assolant's Récits de la Vieille France. Notes by E. B. Wauton. 25 cts.
Muller's Grandes Découvertes Modernes. 25 cts.
Récits de Guerre et de Révolution (Minssen). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Bedollière's La Mère Michel et son Chat (Lyon). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Legouvé and Labiche's Cigale chez les Fourmis (Witherby). 20 cts.
Labiche's La Grammaire (Levi). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Labiche's Le Voyage de M. Perrichon (Wells). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Labiche's La Poudre aux Yeux (Wells). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Lemaitre, Contes (Rensch). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Dumas's Duc de Beaufort (Kitchen). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Dumas's Monte-Cristo (Spiers). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Berthet's Le Pacte de Famine. With notes by B. B. Dickinson. 25 cts.
Erckmann-Chatrian's Le Conscrit de 1813 (Super). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Erckmann-Chatrian's L'Histoire d'un Paysan (Lyon). 25 cts.
France's Abeille (Lebon). 25 cts.
Moinaux's Les deux Sourds (Spiers). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
La Main Malheureuse (Guerber). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Enault's Le Chien du Capitaine (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Trois Contes Choisis par Daudet (Sanderson). Vocabulary. 20 cts.
Desnoyer's Jean-Paul Choppart (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 00 cts.
Selections for Sight Translation (Bruce). 15 cts.
Laboulaye's Contes Bleus (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Malot's Sans Famille (Spiers). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Mellhac and Halévy's L'Été de la St.-Martin (François). Vocab. 25 cts.

Death's Modern Language Series.

INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- Beaumarchais's Le Barbier de Seville** (Spiers). 25 cts.
Erckmann-Chatrian's Waterloo (Super). 35 cts.
About's Le Roi des Montagnes (Logie). 40 cts. Vocabulary, 50 cts.
Pailleron's Le Monde où l'on s'ennuie (Pendleton). 30 cts.
Historiettes Modernes (Fontaine). Vol. I. 60 cts.
Historiettes Modernes. Vol. II. 35 cts.
Fleurs de France (Fontaine). 35 cts.
French Lyrics (Bowen). 60 cts.
Loti's Pêcheur d'Islande (Super). 40 cts.
Loti's Ramuntcho (Fontaine). 30 cts.
Sandean's Mlle. de la Seiglière (Warren). 30 cts.
Souvestre's Le Mari de Mme. Solange (Super). 20 cts.
Souvestre's Les Confessions d'un Ouvrier (Super). 25 cts.
Souvestre's Un Philosophe sous les Toits (Fraser). 50 cts. Vocab., 55 cts.
Angier's Le Gendre de M. Poirier (Wells). 25 cts.
Scribe's Bataille de Dames (Wells). 25 cts.
Scribe's Le Verre d'eau (Eggert). 30 cts.
Merimée's Colomba (Fontaine). 35 cts. With vocabulary. 45 cts.
Merimée's Chronique du Règne de Charles IX (Desages). 25 cts.
Musset's Pierre et Camille (Super). 20 cts.
Verne's Tour du Monde en quatre vingt jours (Edgren). 35 cts.
Verne's Vingt mille lieues sous la mer (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Sand's La Mare au Diable (Sumichrast). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Sand's La Petite Fadette (Super). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Sept Grands Auteurs du XIX^e Siècle (Fortier). Lectures, 60 cts.
Vigny's Cinq-Mars (Sankey). Abridged. 60 cts.
Vigny's Le Cachet Rouge (Fortier). 20 cts.
Vigny's Le Canne de Jonc (Spiers). 40 cts.
Halévy's L'Abbé Constantin (Logie). 30 cts. Vocab. 40 cts.
Halévy's Un Mariage d'Amour (Hawkins). 25 cts.
Renan's Souvenirs d'Enfance et de Jeunesse (Babbitt). 75 cts.
Thier's Expédition de Bonaparte en Egypte (Fabregou). 30 cts.
Gautier's Jettatura (Schinz). 30 cts.
Guerber's Marie-Louise. 25 cts.
Zola's La Débâcle (Wells). Abridged. 60 cts.

Beath's Modern Language Series.

INTERMEDIATE FRENCH TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- Lamartine's *Scènes de la Révolution Française* (Super). With notes and vocabulary. 40 cents.
- Lamartine's *Graziella* (Warren). 35 cts.
- Lamartine's *Jeanne d'Arc* (Barrère). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Michelet: *Extraits de l'histoire de France* (Wright). 30 cts.
- Hugo's *La Chute*. From *Les Misérables* (Huss). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Hugo's *Bug Jargal* (Boiëlle). 40 cts.
- Hugo's *Quatre-vingt-treize* (Fontaine). Vocabulary. 50 cts.
- Champfleury's *Le Violon de Faïence* (Bévenot). 25 cts.
- Gautier's *Voyage en Espagne* (Steel). 25 cts.
- Balzac's *Le Curé de Tours* (Catter). 25 cts.
- Balzac: *Cinq Scènes de la Comédie Humaine* (Wells). 40 cts.
- Contes des *Romanciers Naturalistes* (Dow and Skinner). With notes and vocabulary. 55 cts.
- Daudet's *Le Petit Chose* (Super). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Daudet's *La Belle-Nivernaise* (Boiëlle). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Theuriet's *Bigarreau* (Fontaine). 25 cts.
- Musset: *Trois Comédies* (McKenzie). 30 cts.
- Maupassant: *Huit Contes Choisis* (White). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Taine's *L'Ancien Régime* (Giese). Vocabulary. 65 cts.
- Advanced Selections for Sight Translation (Colin). 15 cts.
- De Tocqueville's *Voyage en Amérique* (Ford). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Dumas' *La Question d'Argent* (Henning). 30 cts.
- Lesage's *Gil Blas* (Sanderson). 40 cts.
- Sarcey's *Le Siège de Paris* (Spiers). Vocabulary, 45 cts.
- About's *La Mère de la Marquise* (Brush). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Chateaubriand's *Atala* (Kuhns). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Erckmann-Chatrian's *Le Jeûne Polonais* (Manley). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Feuillet's *Roman d'un jeune homme pauvre* (Bruner). Vocab. 55 cts.
- Labiche's *La Cagnotte* (Farnsworth). 25 cts.
- La Brète's *Mon Oncle et Mon Curé* (Colin). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
- Dumas' *La Tulipe Noire* (Fontaine). 40 cts. Vocabulary. 50 cts.
- Voltaire's *Zadig* (Babbitt). Vocabulary. 45 cts.

Death's Modern Language Series.

ADVANCED FRENCH TEXTS.

- Balzac's Le Père Goriot** (Sanderson). 80 cts.
Boileau : Selections (Kuhns). 50 cts.
Bossuet : Selections (Warren). 50 cts.
Diderot : Selections (Giese). 50 cts.
Lamartine's Méditations (Curme). 55 cts.
Hugo's Hernani (Matzke). 60 cts.
Hugo's Les Misérables (Super). Abridged. 80 cts.
Hugo's Poems (Schinz). 80 cts.
Hugo's Ruy Blas (Garner). 65 cts.
Racine's Andromaque (Wells). 30 cts.
Racine's Athalie (Eggert). 30 cts.
Racine's Esther (Spier). 25 cts.
Racine's Les Plaideurs (Wright). 30 cts.
Corneille's Le Cid (Warren). 30 cts.
Corneille's Cinna (Matzke). 30 cts.
Corneille's Horace (Matzke). 30 cts.
Corneille's Polyucte (Fortier). 30 cts.
Molière's L'Avare (Levi). 35 cts.
Molière's Le Bourgeois Gentilhomme (Warren). 30 cts.
Molière's Le Misanthrope (Eggert). 30 cts.
Molière's Les Femmes Savantes (Fortier). 30 cts.
Molière's Le Tartuffe (Wright). 30 cts.
Molière's Le Médecin Malgré Lui (Gasc). 15 cts.
Molière's Les Précieuses Ridicules (Toy). 25 cts.
Piron's La Métromanie (Delbos). 40 cts.
La Bruyère : Les Caractères (Warren). 50 cts.
Pascal : Selections (Warren). 50 cts.
Lesage's Turcaret (Kerr). 30 cts.
Taine's Introduction à l'Hist. de la Litt. Anglaise. 20 cts.
Duval's Histoire de la Littérature Française. \$1.00.
Voltaire's Prose (Cohn and Woodward). \$1.00.
French Prose of the XVIIIth Century (Warren). \$1.00.
La Triade Française. Poems of Lamartine, Musset, and Hugo. 75 cts.

ROMANCE PHILOLOGY.

- Introduction to Vulgar Latin** (Grandgent). \$1.50.
Provençal Phonology and Morphology (Grandgent). \$1.50.

Heath's Modern Language Series.

GERMAN GRAMMARS AND READERS.

Nix's Erstes deutsches Schulbuch. For primary classes. Illus. 202 pp. 35 cts.

Joynes-Meissner German Grammar. Half leather. \$1.12

Joynes's Shorter German Grammar. Part I of the above. 80 cts.

Alternative Exercises. Two sets. Can be used, for the sake of change, instead of those in the *Joynes-Meissner* itself. 54 pages. 15 cts.

Joynes and Wesselhoeft's German Grammar. \$1.12.

Harris's German Lessons. Elementary Grammar and Exercises for a short course, or as introductory to advanced grammar. Cloth. 60 cts.

Sheldon's Short German Grammar. For those who want to begin reading as soon as possible, and have had training in some other languages. Cloth. 60c.

Ball's German Grammar. 90 cts.

Ball's German Drill Book. Companion to any grammar. 80 cts.

Spanhoofd's Lehrbuch der deutschen Sprache. Grammar, conversation, and exercises, with vocabularies. \$1.00.

Foster's Geschichten und Märchen. For young children. 25 cts.

Guerber's Märchen und Erzählungen, I. With vocabulary and questions in German on the text. Cloth. 162 pages. 60 cts.

Guerber's Märchen und Erzählungen, II. With Vocabulary. Follows the above or serves as independent reader. Cloth. 202 pages. 65 cts.

Joynes's Shorter German Reader. 60 cts.

Deutsch's Colloquial German Reader. 90 cts.

Spanhoofd's Deutsches Lesebuch. 00 cts.

Bolsen's German Prose Reader. 90 cts.

Huss's German Reader. 70 cts.

Gore's German Science Reader. 75 cts.

Harris's German Composition. 50 cts.

Wesselhoeft's Exercises. Conversation and composition. 50 cts.

Wesselhoeft's German Composition. 40 cts.

Hatfield's Materials for German Composition. Based on *Immensee* and on *Höher als die Kirche*. Paper. 33 pages. Each, 12 cts.

Horning's Materials for German Composition. Based on *Der Schwiegersonn*. 32 pages. 12 cts. Part II only. 16 pages. 5 cts.

Stüven's Praktische Anfangsgründe. A conversational beginning book with vocabulary and grammatical appendix. Cloth. 203 pages. 70 cts.

Krüger and Smith's Conversation Book. 40 pages. 25 cts.

Meissner's German Conversation. 65 cts.

Deutsches Liederbuch. With music. 164 pages. 75 cts.

Heath's German Dictionary. Retail price, \$1.50.

Death's Modern Language Series.

ELEMENTARY GERMAN TEXTS.

- Grimm's Märchen and Schiller's Der Taucher** (van der Smissen). With vocabulary. *Märchen* in Roman Type. 45 cts.
- Andersen's Märchen** (Super). With vocabulary. 50 cts.
- Andersen's Bilderbuch ohne Bilder** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Campe's Robinson der Jüngere** (Ibershoff). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Leander's Träumereien** (van der Smissen). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Volkmann's Kleine Geschichten** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Easy Selections for Sight Translation** (Deering). 15 cts.
- Storm's Geschichten aus der Tonne** (Vogel). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Storm's In St. Jürgen** (Wright). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Storm's Immensee** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Storm's Pole Poppenspüler** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Heyse's Niels mit der offenen Hand** (Joynes). Vocab. and exercises. 30 cts.
- Heyse's L'Arrabbiata** (Bernhardt). With vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Von Hillern's Höher als die Kirche** (Clary). Vocab. and exercises. 30 cts.
- Hauff's Der Zwerg Nase**. No notes. 15 cts.
- Hauff's Das kalte Herz** (van der Smissen). Vocab. Roman type. 40 cts.
- Ali Baba and the Forty Thieves**. No notes. 20 cts.
- Schiller's Der Taucher** (van der Smissen). Vocabulary. 12 cts.
- Schiller's Der Neffe als Onkel** (Beresford-Webb). Notes and vocab. 30 cts.
- Goethe's Das Märchen** (Eggert). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Baumbach's Waldnovellen** (Bernhardt). Six stories. Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Spyri's Rosenreali** (Boll). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Spyri's Moni der Geissbub**. With vocabulary by H. A. Guerber. 25 cts.
- Zschokke's Der zerbrochene Krug** (Joynes). Vocab. and exercises. 25 cts.
- Baumbach's Nicotiana** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
- Elz's Er ist nicht eifersüchtig**. With vocabulary by Prof. B. Wells. 20 cts.
- Carmen Sylva's Aus meinem Königreich** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Gerstäcker's Garmelshausen** (Lewis). Notes and vocabulary. 20 cts.
- Wichert's Als Verlobte empfehlen sich** (Flom). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
- Benedix's Nein** (Spanhoofd). Vocabulary and exercises. 25 cts.
- Benedix's Der Prozess** (Wells). Vocabulary. 20 cts.
- Lambert's Alltägliche**. Vocabulary and exercises. 75 cts.
- Der Weg zum Glück** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
- Mosher's Willkommen in Deutschland**. Vocabulary and exercises. 75 cts.
- Blüthgen's Das Peterle von Nürnberg** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
- Münchhausen: Reisen und Abenteuer** (Schmidt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.

Deard's MODERN Language Series.

INTERMEDIATE GERMAN TEXTS. (Partial List.

- Baumback's Das Kobold-Versteck** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Bayes's Hochzeit auf Capri (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Koffmann's Gymnasium zu Stolpenburg (Bachner). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Grillparzer's Der arme Spanischer (Howard). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Seidel: Aus Goldenen Tagen (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Seidel's Lehnstuhl Hühners (Spanhoofd). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Auf der Sommerseite (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Fronmelt's Mit Ebnel und Wanderstab (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Fronmelt's Kirschenbaum (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Keller's Kleider machen Leute (Lambert). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Littmann's Aus dem Leben (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Baumback's Die Mauer (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Richt's Der Fink der Schöpfung (Thomas). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Richt's Das Spinnwebchen (Der stumme Redner (Ebnel). Vocabulary and exercises. 35 cts.
Ebnel-Baumback's Das Fräulein von Camperlein (Hohlheid). 30 cts. With vocabulary. 40 cts.
Freytag's Die Journalisten (Tov.). 30 cts. With vocabulary. 40 cts.
Wilhelm's Das Urteil des Paris (Wirt). 30 cts.
Schiller's Das Lied von der Glocke (Chamberlin). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Schiller's Jungfrau von Orléans (Wells). Illus. 60 cts. Vocabulary. 60 cts.
Schiller's Maria Stuart (Knochen). Illustrated. 60 cts. Vocabulary. 60 cts.
Schiller's Wilhelm Tell (Coring). Illustrated. 50 cts. Vocabulary. 50 cts.
Schiller's Ballade (Jonsson). 30 cts.
Baumback's Der Schwangerschaft (Bernhardt). 30 cts. Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Arnold's Fritz auf Finken (Spanhoofd). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Bayes's Das Mädchen von Treppi (Jones). Vocabulary and exercises. 35 cts.
Stille Wälder (Bernhardt). Three tales. Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Sauermann's Feja (Ford). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Arnold's Aprilwetter (Fischer). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Gerstaecker's Irrfahrten (Sturm). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Benau's Plinius und Perenn (Der Sonntagsgänger (Wells). 30 cts.
Moser's Kupferstempel (Wells). 30 cts.
Moser's Der Bibliothekar (Wells). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Drei kleine Lustspiele (In der Fingern. Der Pöbel. Der arme Mann. Edited with notes by Prof. B. W. Wells. 30 cts.
Reibig's Komödie auf der Hochschule (Wells). 30 cts.
Sturm's Die Wintersturm (Sturm). Vocabulary. 60 cts.



Beath's Modern Language Series.

INTERMEDIATE GERMAN TEXTS. (Partial List.)

- Baumbach's Das Habichtsfräulein** (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Heyse's Hochzeit auf Capri (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Hoffmann's Gymnasium zu Stolpenburg (Buehner). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Grillparzer's Der arme Spielmann (Howard). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Seidel: Aus Goldenen Tagen (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Seidel's Leberecht Hühnchen (Spanhoofd). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Auf der Sonnenseite (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Frommel's Mit Ränzel und Wanderstab (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Frommel's Eingeschneit (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Keller's Kleider machen Leute (Lambert). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Lilliencron's Anno 1870 (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Baumbach's Die Nonna (Bernhardt). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Riehl's Der Fluch der Schönheit (Thomas). Vocabulary. 30 cts.
Riehl's Das Spielmannskind; Der stumme Ratsherr (Eaton). Vocabulary and exercises. 35 cts.
Ebner-Eschenbach's Die Freiherren von Gemperlein (Hohlfeld). 30 cts.
Freytag's Die Journalisten (Toy). 30 cts. With vocabulary. 40 cts.
Wilbrandt's Das Urtheil des Paris (Wirt). 30 cts.
Schiller's Das Lied von der Glocke (Chamberlin). Vocabulary. 20 cts.
Schiller's Jungfrau von Orleans (Wells). Illus. 60 cts. Vocab., 70 cts.
Schiller's Maria Stuart (Rhoades). Illustrated. 60 cts. Vocab., 70 cts.
Schiller's Wilhelm Tell (Deering). Illustrated. 50 cts. Vocab., 70 cts.
Schiller's Ballads (Johnson). 60 cts.
Baumbach's Der Schwiegersohn (Bernhardt). 30 cts. Vocabulary, 40 cts.
Arnold's Fritz auf Ferien (Spanhoofd). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Heyse's Das Mädchen von Treppi (Joynes). Vocab. and exercises. 30 cts.
Stille Wasser (Bernhardt). Three tales. Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Sudermann's Teja (Ford). Vocabulary. 25 cts.
Arnold's Aprilwetter (Fossler). Vocabulary. 35 cts.
Gerstäcker's Irrfahrten (Sturm). Vocabulary. 45 cts.
Benedix's Plautus und Terenz; Der Sonntagsjäger (Wells). 25 cts.
Moser's Köpnickstrasse 120 (Wells). 30 cts.
Moser's Der Bibliothekar (Wells). Vocabulary. 40 cts.
Drei kleine Lustspiele. Günstige Vorzeichen, Der Prozess, Einer muss heiraten. Edited with notes by Prof. B. W. Wells. 30 cts.
Heibig's Komödie auf der Hochschule (Wells). 30 cts.
Stern's Die Wiedertäufer (Sturm). Vocabulary. 00 cts.

